

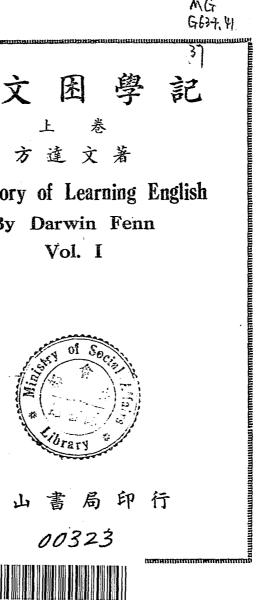
...

The Story of Learning English 英文 图 學 記

上卷方達文著

名山書局印行

The The Story of Learning English By Darwin Fenn





Dedicated to

Dr. William P. Fenn,

My former teacher.

自序

著者過去在學校裏數英文的時候,因為自己時常始勵自己 努力盡本分的原故,在數課方面賺得個「薄有聲譽」,此較主 總算能博得學生一點信仰,所以每當學期開始的時候,就有許 多學生自動發起組織課外英文補習班,想在學校的正式英文鐘 點以外,再多跟著者學習點英文。像學生這種熱心向學的情緒 是不能不為人於佩的。這些學生都是二十歲左右的靑年,正是 在喜歡玩耍噶戲的時候,如果不填是對英文這門課程感到與趣 和需要的話,誰還願意在學按正式的課程以外自動來補習它呢 ?學生們這種熱心向學的情緒與足以鼓勵教員,使教員對於教 課方面更加努力盡本分。當教員的雖明知道「人之惠在好為人 師」,然這時也禁不住教得更外高與起來了。

每當這個補習班初成立的時候,參加的人數都很多。有時人數太多了,還要分成初級高級兩班。起初學生們學習得都很起勁,情緒異常熱烈。但是不幸得很,學生們的與趣好像是隨着時間的消逝而一同減退的。幾個星期以後,當初與高彩烈的人們就會漸漸不來上課了。這種課外補習班是任憑學生自由參加的,教員不能用點名或記過的方法來強迫學生按時上課,對於中途輟學的學生們也只有暗中替他們可惜一番罷了。這樣一來,補習班上的人數乃愈過愈少。兩三個月以後,班上的人最多還能剩下原來的一半。到了學期終了的時候,在班上能有始有終堅持不懈的學生,也不過只有幾個人。這種情形,差不多何參期都是一樣。因此著者難免威慨,有時禁不住搖頭嘆息道:「中國的青年沒有希望,中國的前途那裏會有希望呢!愛國是五分鐘的熱度,讀書也是五分鐘的熱度!」

著者不僅徒事威能,同時也用理智去推想事情的前因後果

• 覺得:我們不能只責備學生,說他們只有五分鐘的熱度;我們還得要追本窮源來問一問,學生為什麼只有這五分鐘的熱度 • 因此,著者抱着一種研究的態度,常常設法和學生們作私人 的接觸,想從他們的談話中探聽出他們對於學習英文的感想和 意見。經過一個相當時期的探討以後,終於發現了學生們一種 心理上的狀態:差不多所有學生們的意見都是一樣的。他們幾 乎都異口同聲地這樣說:「我們本來都是想好好學點英文的, 因為我們都知道英文這門課程很重要,而且對於我們的前途很 有用,所以我們起初都踴躍加入補習班去學習。但是我們學了 不久,就漸漸感覺到英文這門課程太繁難,太單調,學時覺得 枯燥無味,因此漸漸失去了學習的與趣,不能堅持到底。」

著者得了這次經驗以後,對於教讀上面的認識乃更加深刻 一層了。著者覺得,在一個學習的過程中,學生,數員,課本 ,這三樣東西實在是三件要素。這三件要素如果不能有圓滿的 三角關係,學習是難得有良好成績的。學生要用功學,教員要 熱心教,課本也要引入入勝,使學生感覺與趣。單是學生有學 習的志向,教員的教授法也好,如果課本是刻板單調的,枯燥 無味的、學生學久了,還是容明煩厭,不能長期繼續下去。著 者這樣想着,隨便用手翻開那每天所教的課本來,看那文法書 裏盡是各種品詞的定義,滿紙的規則,和一條一條的例句。這 那能使學生發生奧趣呢?還有那讀本上的文選,不是過於古老 ,就是失之遙遠,和學生的日常生活—點不發生關係。學生讀 久了,又那能不生厭倦呢?學習 -種外國語言文字本來就是一 種繁難怙燥的工作,再加之以課本過於嚴肅生硬,學生學習的 時候常然要覺得頭痛了。他們雖知道英文這門課程的重要,他 們雖知道英文這門課程對於他們的前途很有用,他們在起初的 時候雖然與高彩烈地打算去好好學一番,但學了不久以後,因 為感覺到這門功課的枯燥和單調,就漸漸對**它**煩厭起來,不能長期繼續學下去。起初還不過是減退了學習的興趣,但到了最後,連舉習的勇氣都失去了。

按理想上講,像外國語文這一類的課本,最好是能有生動的課文,活潑的教材,充滿了輕鬆的,有現實性的,富有趣味的讀物,然後才能使學生於學習時不致厭倦。此外,在將英文智識本身灌輸給學生的同時,還要將關於學習英文的種種方法,門徑和他人的經驗等等,也灌輸給學生,才能算對學生最為有益。因為同是學習一樣技能,知道了方法和門徑以後,就可以節省很多的精力和時間。這是在學習的過程中不可忽視的一件事情。還有一層,學習上一個最大的缺點是所學的智識和實際生活不發生關係。因為智識和生活不發生關係,所以學非所用,在學習的時候不容易發生與趣。因為學而不用,所以隨學隨忘,學過的東西也不容易在腦海中留下一個深刻永久的印象。要想把學習的效率和與趣提高,實在應當把智識和生活打成一片。古人所謂學以致用,新近的教育家主張教育不可離開生活,都是這個意思。

就是撤開學習英文的事情不提,單就教育的立場來講,像一般男女學生們靑春時期的生活也實在是值得記錄的。靑春時期是人生一個重要時期。這些靑年學生們將來是成為好國民,還是壞國民 , 是成為社會上有益的分子 , 還是有害的分子 , 還是有害的分子 , 是要看在這個時期內一般教育家對於這些靑年們的指導是否得當。這般靑年們在學校裏讀書時所遭遇的事情和問題是很多的。像是學校行政和課程上的問題 , 政局對於求學的影響 , 升學問題 , 就業問題 , 家庭經濟問題 , 婚姻問題 , 德愛問題等等 , 沒有那一件不是對靑年學生們的思想和性格上有深刻影響的。凡是這種種問題都有敍述和記錄的價值 , 因為從這種種零情上

可以看出來這些未來的國家主人翁之—切生活和思想上的動態 •對於負指導青年責任的教育家們來說,這種記錄也許不失為 一種參及研究上的資料。

道部英文困學記是記述幾個學生在初中高中和大學裏學習 英文的經過情形。這裏所記載的有他們私人的生活和在學校裏 的活動,有他們學習英文所得的經驗、方法和門徑等,還有他 們所學過的一切文法和文選等。這書共分上中下三卷。上卷是 記述他們在初中時代學習英文的經過。在這個時期內他們所學 的大概有英文的讀音,普通應用的會話,簡要淺近的文法,精 短的文選,研究英文的方法等等。中卷記述他們在高中時代學 習英文的經過。在這個時期內他們所學的有高深詳盡的文法, 有較難的文選,有新聞雜誌的讀法,有修辭作文的大要,有各 種函件和應用文的寫法等等。下卷是記述他們進了大學以後, 在一二年級的時候學習英文的經過情形。在這個時期,他們所 學的有各種文體如記級文、說明文、描寫文、辯論文的作法, 有文章風格的研究,有有翻譯的研究,有英文文學史上的常識 ,有各種文學形式如詩歌、戲劇、小說的概論等等。

著者並沒有說,這部英文困學記是可以當作學校裏的教科書來用的。這部書裏有普通一般教科書中所有的文法和文選,而沒有普通一般教科書的生硬性和嚴肅性。在這部書裏,英文的智識和輕鬆有趣的故事是混合在一起的。從學習的效率和趣味的觀點上看,有些學生也許會特別歡迎這部書。但在那些講究嚴肅的教員們看來,一定會覺得拿這部書來當教科書用是很不適當的。不過這種意見上的差別對於學習本身並不會發生阻礙。譬如說,一位初學英文的人,覺得他自己所用的課本枯燥無味,提不起與趣,他就不妨拿這部英文困學記來當作一種課外的補充讀物。還有些在英文上已經有了相當根底的人,常想

把自已所學過的東西從頭至尾幣理溫智一遍,若是命起普通一本文法或讀本來,也許讀不到幾頁就會厭慘而拋去了。在遺稿時候,這部書也就會成為他們的好朋友。這並不是說,要專英文,專讀這部書說夠了。這部書當然不能包釋一切,其他重要的書也還是要讀的。這部書不過像一望多加香料的菜肴,能夠刺激人的胃口和食慾,使人多吃幾碗飯罷了。說到這裏,著者不免胆怯起來。這部書由著者獨力編作,而且要在很短的時間內,設法完成,遺漏錯誤,一定雖免。但盼海內賢许,不客隨時指正,那就咸謝不盡了。

最後,關於本書編作的經過,還要來說幾句話。本書之作 ,最初是由名山書局的繆振鵬先生向著者建議的。那時我們由 學習文字問題談到葉聖陶和夏丏尊先生合著的文心,認為在指 導學習國文上,這是一冊值得稱頭的著作。總先生說:「在目 前青年們學習外國文比本國語文,問題還多得多,尤其是英文 ,每一個學習稍有成就的人,都曾有許多艱難而寶貴的經歷, 為什麼我們不能以學習英文為題材,寫一冊不同的「文心」呢 ?」著者覺得他這種見解很能掻着讀者的廢處,於是就立刻答 應了他。當時著者本打算立刻動手就寫的,但不幸又遇到了許 多為生活而不得不奔走的事情,以致拖延下來,很久未能執筆 。最近,又蒙繆先生予以種種的鼓勵和種種的協助,使此書能 夠有一個好的開端,并可能如期完成,實在非常值得在這裏特 別提出來向繆先生致謝的。

民國三十六年一月於上海

● 覺得:我們不能只責備學生,說他們只有五分鐘的熱度;我們還得要追本窮源來問一問,學生為什麼只有這五分鐘的熱度 ● 因此,著者抱着一種研究的態度,常常設法和學生們作私人的接觸,想從他們的談話中探聽出他們對於學習英文的威想和意見。經過一個相當時期的探討以後,終於發現了學生們一種心理上的狀態:差不多所有學生們的意見都是一樣的。他們幾乎都異口同聲地這樣說:「我們本來都是想好好學點英文的,因為我們都知道英文這門課程很重要,而且對於我們的前途很有用,所以我們起初都踴躍加入補習班去學習。但是我們學了不久,就漸漸威覺到英文這門課程太繁難,太單調,學時覺得枯燥無味,因此漸漸失去了學習的與趣,不能堅持到底。」

著者得了這次經驗以後,對於教讀上面的認識乃更加深刻 一層了。著者覺得,在一個學習的過程中,學生,教員,課本 ,這三樣東西實在是三件要素。這三件要素如果不能有**圓滿的** 三角關係,學習是雖得有良好成績的。學生更用功學,教員要 熱心教,課本也要引人入勝,使學生感覺與趣。單是學生有學 習的志向,教員的教授法也好,如果課本是刻板單調的,枯燥 無味的、學生學久了,還是容明煩厭,不能長期繼續下去。著 者這樣想着、隨便用手翻開那每天所教的課本來,看那文法書 裏盡是各種品詞的定義,滿紙的規則,和一條一條的例句。這 那能使學生發生興趣呢?還有那讀本上的文選,不是過於古老 · 就是失之遙遠 , 和學生的日常生活一點不發生關係 。 學生讀 久了,又那能不生厭倦呢?學習一種外國語言文字本來就是一 種繁難枯燥的工作,再加之以課本過於嚴肅生硬,學生學習的 時候當然要覺得頭痛了。他們雖知道英文這門課程的重要,他 們雖知道英文這門課程對於他們的前途很有用,他們在起初的 時候雖然與高彩烈地打算去好好學一番,但學了不从以後,因

為感覺到這門功課的枯燥和單調,就漸漸對它煩厭起來,不能 長期機續學下去。起初還不過是減退了學習的興趣,但到了最 後,連舉習的勇氣都失去了。

接理想上講,像外國語文這一類的課本,最好是能有生動的課文,活潑的教材,充滿了輕鬆的,有現實性的,富有趣味的讀物,然後才能使學生於學習時不致厭倦。此外,在將英文智識本身灌輸給學生的同時,還要將關於學習英文的種種方法,門徑和他人的經驗等等,也灌輸給學生,才能算對學生最為有益。因為同是學習一樣技能,知道了方法和門徑以後,射可以節省很多的精力和時間。這是在學習的過程中不可忽視的一件事情。還有一層,學習上一個最大的缺點是所學的智識和實際生活不發生關係。因為智識和生活不發生關係,所以學非所用,在學習的時候不容易發生與趣。因為學而不用,所以隨學隨忘,學過的東西也不容易在腦海中留下一個深刻永久的印象。要想把學習的效率和與趣提高,實在應當把智識和生活打成一片。古人所謂學以致用,新近的教育家主張教育不可離開生活,都是這個意思。

就是撇開學習英文的事情不提,單就教育的立場來講,像一般男女學生們靑春時期的生活也實在是值得記錄的。靑春時期是人生一個重要時期。這些靑年學生們將來是成為好國民,還是壞國民,是成為社會上有益的分子,還是有害的分子,全要看在這個時期內一般教育家對於這些靑年們的指導是否得當。這般靑年們在學按裏讀書時所遭遇的事情和問題是很多的。像是學校行政和課程上的問題,政局對於求學的影響,升學問題,就業問題,家庭經濟問題,婚姻問題,戀愛問題等等,沒有那一件不是對靑年學生們的思想和性格上有深刻影響的。凡是這種種問題都有敍述和記錄的價值,因為從這種種苓情上

可以看出來這些未來的國家主人翁之一切生活和思想上的動態 。對於負指、漢青年責任的教育家們來說,這種記錄也許不失為 一種參及研究上的資料。

這部英文困學記是記述幾個學生在初中高中和大學裏學習 英文的經過情形。這裏所記載的有他們私人的生活和在學校裏 的活動,有他們學習英文所得的經驗、方法和門徑等,還有他 們所學過的一切文法和文選等。這書共分上中下三卷。上卷是 記述他們在初中時代學習英文的經過。在這個時期內他們所學 的大概有英文的讀音,普通應用的會話,簡要淺近的文法,精 短的文選,研究英文的方法等等。中卷記述他們在高中時代學 習英文的經過。在這個時期內他們所學的有高深詳盡的文法, 有較難的文選,有新聞雜誌的讀法,有修辭作文的大要,有各 種函件和應用文的寫法等等。下卷是記述他們進了大學以後, 在一二年級的時候學習英文的經過情形。在這個時期,他們所 學的有各種文體如記錄文、說明文、描寫文、辯論文的作法, 有文章風格的研究,有有翻譯的研究,有英文文學史上的常識 ,有各種文學形式如詩歌、戲劇、小說的概論等等。

著者並沒有說,這部英文困學記是可以當作學校裹的教科書來用的。這部書裏有普通一般教科書中所有的文法和文選,而沒有普通一般教科書的生硬性和嚴肅性。在這部書裏,英文的智識和輕鬆有趣的故事是混合在一起的。從學習的效率和趣味的觀點上看,有些學生也許會特別歡迎這部書。但在那些講究嚴肅的教員們看來,一定會覺得拿這部書來當教科書用是很不適當的。不過這種意見上的差別對於學習本身並不會發生阻礙。譬如說,一位初學英文的人,覺得他自己所用的課本枯燥無味,提不起與趣,他就不妨拿這部英文困學記來當作一種課外的補充讀物。還有些在英文上已經有了相當根底的人,常想

把自已所學過的東西從頭至尾整理温習一逼, 若是拿起普通一本文法或讀本來, 也許讀不到幾頁就會厭俗而拋去了。在這種時候, 這部書也就會成為他們的好朋友。這並不是說, 要學英文, 專讀這部書就夠了。這部書當然不能包羅一切, 其他重要的書也還是要讀的。這部書不過像一整多加香料的菜肴, 能夠刺激人的胃口和食慾, 使人多吃幾碗飯罷了。說到這裏, 著者不免胆怯起來。這部書由著者獨力編作, 而且要在很短的時間內, 設法完成, 遺漏錯誤, 一定難免。但盼海內賢哲, 不各隨時指正, 那就歐謝不盡了。

最後,關於本書編作的經過,還要來說幾句話。本書之作,最初是由名山書局的繆振鵬先生向著者建議的。那時我們由學習文字問題談到葉聖陶和夏丏尊先生合著的文心,認為在指導學習國文上,這是一冊值得稱頭的著作。繆先生說:「在目前靑年們學習外國文比本國語文,問題還多得多,尤其是英文,每一個學習稍有成就的人,都曾有許多艱難而寶貴的經歷,為什麼我們不能以學習英文為題材,寫一冊不同的「文心」呢?」著者覺得他這種見解很能掻着讀者的廢處,於是就立刻答應了他。當時著者本打算立刻動手就寫的,但不幸又遇到了許多為生活而不得不奔走的事情,以致拖延下來,很久未能執筆。最近,又蒙繆先生予以種種的鼓勵和種種的協助,使此書能夠有一個好的開端,并可能如期完成,實在非常值得在這裏特別提出來向繆先生致謝的。

民國三十六年一月於上海

英文困學記

目次

自序

I 一個不喜歡學英文的人

II 受了女同學的刺激

III 英語會話要多少天才能學會呢

IV 受了戰爭的影響

V 满牆的英文字

VI 小小的風波.

VII 心不在書

VIII 意外中的意外

IX· 罷考時的收穫

X 不激而終的遠足旅行

XI 英文演說會

XII 訪問的真意

XIII 別雜的悲哀

XIV 最後一課



英文图學

I. 一個不喜歡學習英文的人

『入學的時期快過,假如你還不拿定主意的話,你就要成為失學的青年了。你討厭教會,這我是知道的。不過信教是各人的自由,你進了啓慧以後,每天專心念你的書,有誰能來強迫你去信教呢?而且教會學校裏英文這門課程是向來出名的。 有許多人因為要好好學點英文,還特意想去進教會學校哩!』

『我們是中國人,只要學學我們自己的國文就夠了。那洋 鬼子的英文,一定要學它幹什麼呢?』林祖義聽他父親提到學 英文的事,不由得格外憤恨起來。

林祖義心裏的這種憤恨也不是沒有來由的。他在高小裏雖 也讀了兩年英文,但對於英文這門課程却從來沒有發生過奧趣 。他的國文、算術,成績都頂好,惟有英文不及格。所以別人 一提起英文來,他就憤恨。但是他父親看他這樣,却很不以為 然,趕忙對他說:

『你不耍輕視了英文這門功課。學校裏的数員們不是常說

嗎,「中英算,中英算!」中文、英文、算術,這三門功課是同樣重要的。你且坐下來,我慢慢講給你聽。』於是林廷淸將 他的兒子林祖義按坐在旁邊的凳子上,慢慢地向他解說道:

『現在已經不是從前的閉關時代了。現在的世界,因為交 通和科學日漸發達,世界各國間的關係也日趨密切。中國如想 在國際間立脚,也非和世界各國有交往不可。旣要和外國有交 往,就得通晓外國的語言文字。有時只會一種外國文還不夠, 還要學習第二種第三種外國文。譬如你將來中學**畢業以後**,進 了大學的時候,除了英文以外,也許還要選讀一門法文或德文 。在各種外國文中比較起來,英文的使用範圍最廣,可以說是 世界上最通行的語文,而且文法簡單,最容易學習。從世界上 的經濟文化各方面情形看起來,到了最後,英文也許會成為世 界上的公用語文。把英文學會了以後,拿英文做個基礎,再去 學習法文、德文、俄文等,那就比較省力氣了。還有一層,學 會了英文以後,對於中文也有補益。因為若將英文和中文融會 賈通起來,則中文的單字和辭藻都得以增加,中文的筆調也可 以顯得新鮮潤澤。有許多精通英文的人都說;用英文寫起文章 來,處處可以運用自如,傳情達意都非常容易。這實在是因為 英文裏的語彙特別豐富,可以取之不盡,用之不竭的原故。不 過這些事情現在和你說起來你也不大容易懂得,等將來你書念 多了,自然就會慢慢了解的。你暫時只記住英文這門課程的重 耍,從此努力去學習就是。啓慧中學裏的英文課程都是外國人 親自教授,這實在是學習英文的好機會,你萬不可錯過!』

『要學英文,跟中國人學也可以,為什麼一定要跟洋鬼子學呢?』林祖義對於那些常從啓慧中學出出進進的許多外國人們也似乎沒有好印象。高鼻子, 藍眼睛,頭髮是黃的, 手伸出來毛茸茸地害怕人。林祖義覺得, 和那些異類的人交往已經是

很不高尚的了,那還能跟他們去讀書呢?但是他的父親林廷清却向他說:

『直接跟外國人學英文也有一樣好處,那就是在會話方面,進步要快得多了。我們普通學英文的目的,不但要能看書,能作文,還要能說話。普通一般中國教員教英文時,總都用中國話來講解,很少直接用英語來和學生談話的。因此學生在會話方面沒有練習的機會。在看書作文方面即使不落人後,在會話方面總要差一點了。因為會話是個練習問題,譬如有一個字,你每天用眼睛看慣了,一看就可以懂得;你每天用手寫慣了,一想到馬上也能寫出來;但是你耳朵沒有聽慣,你嘴也沒有說慣。同是這一個字,若是從別人嘴裏說出來,你就聽不懂;你自己嘴裏想說,急忙也說不出來。結果你眼能看得懂,手能寫得出,但是你耳朵聽不懂,嘴也說不好。這都是因為你耳口兩方面在平時缺乏練習的原故。現在既能直接跟外國人學英文,不但可以學得會看書,會寫文章,還可以學得會說話,這實在是難得的機會,你那能隨便放過呢?』

『但是我對於英文根本就沒有興趣,所以我過去在高小時 也沒有好好學。不過那時大家都是中國人,學不好也沒有關係 。現在却要跟外國人去學,起初言語又不通,假如是學不好的 話,不是很難爲情嗎?別的我都不怕,只是這件事使我擔心。 』 林祖義說着,顯出十分為難的樣子。

『這件事是用不着擔心的,』他的父親林廷清趕忙安慰他。『與趣這件事不是先天生成的性情,乃是後天澄成的習慣。你過去對英文沒有與趣,是因為你起初對英文就沒有多注意的原故。因為不注意,所以學不好;因為學不好,所以沒有與趣;因為沒有與趣,所以更學不好;因為更學不好,所以更沒有與趣。這其中有一種循環作用的。你今後對英文只要多注點意

,好好用功去學,自然就會漸漸發生興趣了。至於說學不好, 怕難為情,那更是一種錯誤的心理。凡是一種技能學問,都不 是先天就會,乃是後天學來的。天下的事情那有一學就會的呢 ?學一遍不會,繼續再學,直到學會為止。失敗為成功之母。 怕人笑話的心理根本是錯誤的。學習外國文的祕訣是要胆大, 要常常練習,要有繼續不斷的堅忍心。你如果怕錯,怕人家笑 話,怕難為情,不敢練習,你就永遠學不會。所以你所說的沒 有興趣,怕難為情的話,都是不足掛慮的。』

林廷淸說罷,看他兒子林祖義不再表示反對,知道林祖義的心意是轉囘過來了。於是停了一會,又繼續說下去道:

『我所認為足以掛盧的,倒是另外一件事情。你知道,啓 禁中學是男女合校的。這如果在通都大邑,風氣開通的地方, 像是上海天津等處,那倒也不成問題。只是像在我們這小地方 ,風氣還不開通,男女的界限還很嚴,男女合校本來是不甚合 式的。更加以啓禁中學裏的男女同學們又不斷發生戀愛的事情 ,所以地方上的人士對那學校不滿意的也很多。不過若替他們 這般來中國雜穀育的外國人想一想,他們也總算是煞費苦心了 他們的學校如果是只收男生不收女生的話,不合他們男女平 等的理想,在他們覺得好像是對不起中國女性似的。如果男女 學生分開,辦兩個學校,經費上又發生問題。所以結果只好辦 個男女合校。可是我所擔心的也正在這裏。我覺得像你們現在 這樣的年齡,正是情竇初開的靑春少年。我怕你進了啓慧中學 以後,每天不把心放在書上,只把心放在女同學身上;每天不 用腦筋去研究學問,只用腦筋去逗引女同學說話;那結果就難 **免**左誤光陰, 荒廢學業了。我站在做父親的立場上, 不能不把 這事情預先提出來對你警告。』

林祖義聽完他父親這段話,低下頭去,一句話也不說。他

恩得他的心頭不知道是被什麼東西觸動了一下,頓時湧走一陣 血潮,接着就沉思起來了。他自己心裏承認,他最近對於啓慧中學的女學生的確很注意。有時放學回家,他要特意繞道啓慧中學的門口,去看那些出出進進的女學生。有時有幾個女學生走過他自家的門口,他會躲在門後,從門縫中偷看她們。還有一次,他居然會跑進他那平日所最反對的教堂去做證拜,為的想去看看那些坐在禮拜堂裏右邊的許多女學生們。他向來認為這許多事情都是他心中的祕密,別人是不會知道的,却萬料不到今天被他父親一口道破了。他想到這裏,不禁暗自覺得惭愧,於是那過去的種種就如電影一般,又在他的心幕上演出來了。

『進了啓慧中學以後,倒眞可以天天看見女學生啦!』林 祖義心裏才這樣一想,馬上就慚愧起來,不敢再想下去。可是 這時他的父親林廷清却反而寬慰起來,因為他看出他的兒子林 祖義對於進啓慧中學一層已經不堅持反對的態度了。

II. 受了女同學的刺激

林祖義初進啓慧中學的時候,每天與舊極了。行開學典禮那天,他聽了那外國校長的一篇中文演說以後,發生了許多感想。當他看見那位身穿監袍黑馬街的外國人走上講壇的時候,他心裏想:『無論你衣服穿得怎樣像中國人,你總說不好中國話。』但是出乎他意料之外的,那校長却用中國話滔滔說了一大篇。這事使林祖義非常驚異,非常懷疑:『外國人說中國話居然有說得這樣好的,可不知中國人說英文也有說得這樣好的嗎?』從此以後,他對於外國人的觀念就改變了許多。他和同學們談談,才知道那位校長的英文名字叫 Niles,中文名字叫賴爾茲,到中國來傳教辦教育已經有十幾年了。

他的教室裏右邊兩排坐的盡是女生,一共九個人。左邊五排,坐的是男生,一共總有二三十人。其中有兩個名叫高鴻文和姜亮友的,是他過去在樂羣小學時候的同學,這次是和他一同考進來的。訓育主任來排位子,將林祖義排在最右邊的前一行,右邊緊靠女生。他轉臉看看坐在他右邊的那個女生,生得胖臉兒,尖尖鼻子,但是嘴裏上排靠右邊的牙齒好像是缺了一顆。但他也未敢仔細瞧看就趕忙把臉轉過來了。上課的鐘已經啟過了,但是教室裏還是一團凱嚷嚷。高鴻才和姜亮友跑過來和林祖養談論令後讀英文的事情。高鴻才的父親是在教會裏做事的,他的英文根底很好。過去在樂翠小學時他的英文成績是全班第一。但這時他也害怕起啓慧中學的英文,滿心愁着怕跟不上班。他們正在談得起勁,忽然聽得一個高大沉重的聲音說道:

"Good morning!"

林祖義抬頭一看,但見從門外已經走進一個外國人來。那

人身材特別高大,進門的時候,頭幾乎要碰在門頂上了。林龍 義心裏想:『這 good morning 一句話不是在大清早和朋友相 遇時互相問早的話嗎?現在已經是十一點鐘光景了,他怎麼還 向我們說 good morning 呢?』他一邊想着,看那外國人已經 走到教員的座位上坐下來了。那教員坐下來後,用服在屋裏 視了一過,微笑着用中國話說:

『你們當中,許多都是新學生。我不認識你們,你們也不認識我。』他說罷,微笑着站起來,就拿粉筆在黑板上寫了『康庇禮』三個大字。字寫得端端正正,一筆不苟,他寫完中文,又寫了兩個英文字 Kenneth Campbell 在旁邊。寫完後,用手指著黑板上的字對學生們說:

『我的中文名字叫「康庇禮」,英文名字叫 Kenneth Campbell.』

康庇禮說完又拿起桌上的一本書來對學生們說:

"This book is called Fifty Famous Stories Retold. We are going to study it this term." 康庇禮說完英文後怕學生不懂,於是又用中國話重複說一遍道:

『這本書叫做泰西五十軼事。這學期我們就念它。』 接着,康庇禮又將 famous 和 retold 兩個字寫在黑板上 , 問學生說:

"What does the word famous mean? famous 這個字是什麽意思?" 康庇禮用兩種語言重複發問。

『有名的!』林祖義聽得有一個坐在後面的學生高聲叫 着。

"Explain it in English! 用英文解释!" 康庇禮說。 班上頓時寂静起來,沒有一個人發聲。這時林祖義正張跟 望着康庇禮,康庇禮立刻指着他說: "Will you please tell us?"

林祖義也沒有聽淸楚康庇禮所說的話是甚麼意思,然而他 明白這是叫他解釋那個英文字的。他嚇得連忙把頭搖一搖,接 着就把頭低下去。於是康庇禮就指着坐在他右邊的那位嘴裏好 像是缺了一顆牙的女生,叫她解釋。那女生却不慌不忙,用嬌 柔的聲音說道:

"Famous means well known."

"That's good." 康庇禮說, "Then what does the word retald mean?"

班上更加寂静,連咳嗽的聲音都沒有。林祖義覺得;這次 總不致於再問到自己了。於是他不由得就把頭抬起來。誰知康 庇禮一看見他的臉,馬上又對他說,

"Try to speak English! Don't be afraid!"

林祖義雖聽不懂康庇禮所說的話,然而他猜想這一定是叫 他解釋的。這時他更加慌張和窘迫,但覺臉上發熱,也不知是 應當低頭好,還是抬頭好。康庇禮看見他的樣子,不覺微笑起 來,於是又指着他旁邊那缺牙的女生道:

"Well, you may tell us again."

於是那女生又不慌不忙的用燒柔的聲音說:

"Re-means again; retold means told again."

"That's all right," 康庇禮說, "Famous means well known. Retold means told again."

康庇禮說罷,又拿起桌上另外的一本書向學生說:

"This is Nesfield Grammar Book II. We have finished studying Book I last term. Then we shall study Book II from now on." 照例的,康庇禮說完英文後又說一遍中文:『這是納氏英文第二冊。上學期我們已經念完第一冊。此後我

們就要念這第二冊了 • 』

這時學生們都已經把書從桌子裏拿了出來。惟獨林祖義事 先不知道,沒有買書。康庇禮看他沒有書,就問他說:

"Have you got a book?"

林祖義但覺得耳朵裏嗡嗡作響,不知道康庇禮所說的是什麼意思。他只好望着康庇禮的臉,坐在那裏發呆。康庇禮知道, 他是沒有聽懂,又用中國話向他說:

『你有書嗎?』

『我沒有書。』林祖義聽了連忙搖搖頭說。

"Speak English, please. - Try to speak English."

這句話的意思林祖義却聽出來了,因為 speak English 被重複說了兩遍,他聽得很清楚。但是叫他說英文實在太難為他了。他從來沒有說過英文,填是一點也說不出來。他心裏一急,不由得就把頭低下去了。但是康庇讀却催促他道:

"Try to speak! Try!"

林祖義被這樣一催促格外着了慌。他覺得坐在右邊兩排的 女生都好像在張目看着他。他覺得背後的許多男生也都好像在 籁笑了。他覺得:如果不鼓起勇氣來說一句,這囘的臉可就要 丟大了!但是如何說法呢?『我沒有書』這句話在英文裏應當 怎樣說才對呢?他默默想了一會,終於抬起頭來,鼓出勇氣說:

"I not have book."

"Good! That's good!" 康庇禮連忙稱證他。"Be brave! Don't be afraid of making mistakes!" 康庇禮用英文說能,又用中文說:『放大胆!不要怕錯!』於是他拿起粉筆來,將林祖義所說的那句英文寫在黑板上,又向大家說:

"This sentence is wrong. Who knows the mistakes"? 『這句話的錯處誰能看得出?』康庇證問罷等了一會,看全班沒 有一個人回答,不由得顯出很失望的樣子,向那坐在林祖義右 邊的女生說:

"Miss Mu, I think you know the mistakes. Will your tell us please?"

Miss Mu 於是不慌不忙地說道:

"He may say 'I do not have a book,' but that sounds as if he does not have a book habitually. In his case he had better say 'I have no book,' or 'I have not a book,' or 'I haven't got a book'."

"Yes, that's good!" 康庇禮很高奧地稱讚她。『have 這個字,有許多不規則的用法,本來是很難了解的,莫小姐的解釋,大家都明白嗎?』

這時最覺得難堪的實在是林祖義了。他不會說英文,被逼得窘態畢露。他分明說錯了,康庇禮還要稱證他一聲·Good! That's good! 他雖知道康庇禮是稱證他有說英文的勇氣,並不是說反話談笑他,然而他也覺得臉上很沒趣。何况康庇禮又將他說的那句不像話的英文寫在黑板上,讓全班同學看!不過這些事也都不提了。最使他覺得難以為情的是:他的錯處却被坐在他身邊的一位女同學改正了過來。他愈想愈覺得可羞,但覺得兩頰上的熱度慢慢傳到耳後同脖子來了。他只好低下頭去看着桌面子。

這時康庇禮又向全體學生說道:

"Maybe you have forgotten the grammar you learned last term. Now let us review our grammar. What are the eight parts of speech?"

康庇證才問罷,就聽見左邊有一個學生搶着說:

"Noun (名詞), pronoun (代名詞), adjective (形容

詞),verb(動詞),adverb(疏狀詞),………』說到這裏,那學生忽然把下面的忘記了,再也想不起來。於是康庇禮替他接下去說:

"Preposition (前置詞),conjunction (連接詞),interjection (咸嘆詞)。

康庇禮說罷,就在黑板上將八種品詞的定義和例子都寫出來,並叫學生抄在筆記本上。他們所抄的是:

- 1. nouns: students, teacher, book, cesk, Campbell...... Anoun is a name of a person or a thing. (名詞就是人 的名字或東西的名稱。)
- 2. pronouns: I, you, he, she, it, who...... A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun. (代名詞 是代替名詞而用的字。)
- 3. adjectives: good, bad, big, tall, strong, black, pretty......
 - An adjective is a word used to describe a noun or a pronoun. (形容詞是形容名詞或代名詞的字。)
- 4. verbs: study, listen, teach, speak, sit...... A verb is a word used for saying something about some person or thing. (動詞是述及人或物的字。)
- 5. adverbs: very, slowly, carefully, too...... An adverb is a word used to modify any part of speech except a noun or pronoun. (疏狀詞是形容名 詞和代名詞以外的品詞的字。)
- prepositions: of, in, on, to, for.....
 A preposition is a word placed before a noun or pronoun to form an adjective or an adverbial phrase.

(前置詞是用以加在名詞或代名詞的前面,以便形成一種形容性質或疏狀性質的詞語的字。)

- 7. conjunctions: and, or, but, because...... A conjunction is a word used to join words or groups of words. (連接詞是用以連接上下文的字。)
- 8. interjections: oh! ah! alas! Hurrah!.....
 An interjection is a word used to express some emotion. (感嘆詞是用以發表激動的情緒的字。)

康庇禮等全班學生抄完了筆記以後,又對他們說:

『你們既研究文法,就要先明白研究文法的目的。你們應 當自己反問:「我們為什麼要研究文法呢?」像我們英美人, 有的一生一世也沒有學過文法,然而也照樣能看書,能作文。 這原因是很簡單的:英文是我們的國語,我們出生後不久,在 母親的懷抱中就開始學英文了。我們從嬰兒時代起,一直就是 聽得多,說得多,看得多,所以我們不學文法,也可以學會英 文。但是你們是中國人。英文對於你們是一種外國文。你們從 小並沒有學過。所以你們現在學英文時不能採用我們小時所用 的那種方法。假如你們要走我們學英文時所經過的那條道路, 那就太緩慢了。恐怕就是經過許許多多年的學習以後,也不能 對英文有相當的了解。在時間上講,實在是太不經濟了。幸而 有英文文法這鬥科學,可以提高你們了解英文的能力,增加你 們學會英文的速度。英文文法能把英文字辭的性質和它們變化 的情形告訴你—個大概。這實在是學習英文的利器和捷徑。現 在的英文文法是由無數的文法學家費了莫大的心血從英文中所 整理歸納出來的法則和條例。你們明白了這種法則和條例以後 ,就可以很快地把英文學會了。固然,你們就是不學文法,只 要書讀多了,自己也可以從語文中悟出許多條理和法則來。但 是這種自己所借出的多半是片段而沒有系統的。』展底禮說到這裏,坐了來收停一會,又慢慢地接下去說:

『不是有一層,你們也要認清楚。你們學習文法的目的並不是要是一個專問的文法學家。你們學習文法的目的不過想利用文學做你們的嚮導,來加速你們對於英文語句構造的了解能了。 你們現在學習文法並不一定要死記文法裏的定義和規則於這些定義和規則目前只要看一看就夠了。能記得住更好,記不住也沒有關係。而且各種文法書裏的定義和說明又不相同,你們現在也不必去比較它們的優劣。你們現在學習文法時所應當注意的是要利用文法來認識英文語句的構造,以便對於語句裏所有的含義都能澈底地了解。因此,你們在讀書時對於語句中的每一個字都要留心注意。每一個字,它在語句中佔什麼地位,有什麼功用,各什麼性質,都要澈底認識清楚,不可絲毫馬虎過去。可康庇禮說話的時候全班的學生都很注意聽,有幾個學生還把緊要的地方記在筆記本上。康庇禮見了很高興,他不由得還想多說一點:

『英文文法不是作一下子可以全部記住的東西。並且用這種勉強不自然的方法就是記住了也沒有用。 医為英文文法不過是了解英文的利器和捷徑,並不是英文本身。只學會了英文文法是不夠的。書讀得少,語彙記得少,單是記住些文法上的條理和規則也不切實用。所以文法應當和讀本相輔而行,同時並讀。你們應當用文法來解釋讀本,用讀本來驗證文法。你們是好多買幾部完備的文法書放在身邊,遇到讀書有疑難不解的地方就翻開來查看。有空的時候,也要把學過的文法書常常拿出來溫習和觀摩。這樣過久了,文法上許多難以明白的定義和條規就可以漸漸明白了,許多不容易記住的變化和法則也可以漸漸記住了。』 康庇禮說完後立刻站起來在黑板上寫了六個句子:

- 1) Kam a tall and strong man
- 2). __ach English in school.

Boys and girls study ory hard

4) They are good students.

- (5) I speak to them slowly and the n to me carefully.
- (6) Ah! English is not easy for them 康庇禮寫罷對學生們說:

作。們現在這六個句子驗證我們剛才所學過的文法。我們剛才所學過的八種品詞這六個句子中都有。我們第一步先從這六個句子中把那人看看一該類找出來;然後再來看每句中的每一個字都在該句中含件麼性質,佔什麼地位,有什麼功用。假如這些問題你們都能解答代。來,你們對於這六句話裏的意思就可以說是徹底了解了。

振庇禮說罷,就叫學生們從這六個句子中把八種品詞都找 出來。學生們有說得不對的地方,他再加以改正和補充。他們 我得的結果是這樣的:

- nouns: (1) man; (2) English, school; (3) boys, girls; (4) students; (5) English.
- 2. pronoun (1) I; (2) I: (4) they; (5) I, them, they, make them.
- 3. adjectives (1) a, tall, strong; (4) good; (6) easy.
- 4. verbs: (1) am; (2) teach; (3) study; (4) are; (5) speak, listen; (6) is.
- .5. adverbs: (3) very, mard; (5) slowly, carefully; (6) not.
- 6. prepositons: (2) in; (5) to, to; (6) for.
- 7. conjunctions: (1) and; (3) and; (5) and.

8. interiestion: (6) ah!

- (1) I am a tall and strong man.
- (2) Leach English in school:
- (3). The stand girls | study very hard.
- (4) They are good students.
- (5) It speak to them slowly and they listen to me
- (6) A ringlish is not easy for them.

康周劃完後於是向學生解釋道:

『在学句裏面,I 是 subject, 其餘的部分都是 predicate I 是 pronoun; am 是 verb; a, tall, strong 二面子都是taged tive, 形容 man 那個 noun; and 是 conjunction, 將 tall to strong 兩個形容詞連接起來 o

『在第二句裏面,I 是 subject, 其餘的部份都是 predicate I 是 pronoun; teach 是 verb; ▲ English 是 poun, 是動詞 teach 的 object; in 是 preposition; school 是 noun 是前置詞 in 的 object, 前置詞 in 和名詞 school 合成一個 propositional phrase 是一個 adverbus phrase, 形容動詞 teach. 這是表示:是在學校裏教的,並不是在私人家庭裏或別的地方教的。○

『在第三句裏』,Boys and girls 是 subject, 其餘的

是 predicate. 這個 subject 異面包含有兩個 noun, 所以叫做 compound subject. study 是 verb. very 是 adverb. hard 也是 adverb. hard 這個 adverb 形容動詞 study, 所以 study hard 就是表示「用功讀書」。 very 這個 adverb 形容疏狀詞 hard, 所以 very hard 就是表示「很用功」。

『在第四句裏面, They 是 sudject, 其餘的是 predicate. They 是 pronoun; are 是 verb; good 是 adjective, 形容名詞 students.

『在第五句裏面,一個長句之中又包含兩個子句。第一個 子句是 I speak to them slowly; 第二個子句是 they listen to me carefully. 這兩個子和中間用一個 and 連接起來,但彼此都 可能各自獨立。在第一個子句裏面, I 是 subject, 其餘的是 predicate. I是 pronoun. speak 是 verb. to 是 preposition. them 是 pronoun. them 是 to 的 object. to 和 them 合起 來成為一個 prepositional phrase; 這個 prepositional phrase 是一個 adverbial phrase, 形容 speak 那個動詞。這就是確定 表示着:是「對他們說」的,並不是對別人說的。 slowly 是 adverb,也形容 speak. 這就是說:是「慢慢地說」的,並不 是快快地說的。在第二個子句裏面 they 是 subject, listen to me carefully 是 predicate. they 是 pronoun. listen 是 verb. to me 是個 prepositional phrase, 這是個 adverbial phrase, 形容 listen 那個動詞,所以把「聽」的意思限制到只是「對 我 | 這一方面而言的了。 carefully 是 adverb, 也是形容 listen 那個動詞的,所以把「聽」的意思形容成是「小心地」樣 子。

『在第六句裏面, ah 是感嘆詞。 English 是 subject, 是 pronoun. is 是 verb. easy 是 adjective. 在這個地方也叫做

predicate adjective, 因為它是形容 English 那個 subject 的 。這和第一句裏的 man, 和第四句裏的 students, 有相似的地方。 man 和 students 在那兩個句子裏譯可以叫做 predicate nominative, 因為 man 和 students 雖處在 predicate 的地位,却和 subject (卽 nominative) 所代表的人物是相同的。第一句裏的 man 就是 I; I 就是 man. 第四句裏的 they 就是 students; students 就是 they. 因此,像 man 和 students 這一類字都叫做 predicate nominative, 像第六句裏的 easy, 雖是處在 predicate 的地位,却是形容 subject 的,所以也叫做 predicate adjective. 第六句裏的 not 是 adverb, 形容 easy 那個形容詞,將 easy 的意思限制到否定的一方面去。 for them 這個 prepositional phrase 是 adverbial phrase, 也形容 easy. 這就是很明確地說出:「容易」或不容易,是「對他們」而言,並不是對別人而言的…………」」康庇禮的話還沒有說完,已經敲下課籍了。他於是趕快結束他的演講道:

『你們以後讀英文,處處都照這傑仔細研究,進步自然就 快了。』康庇禮說罷,就向學生點頭,表示下課。

當康庇禮要走出教室的時候 , 他又向學生們高聲說了一句:

"Good morning!"

這時站在林祖義身後的高進才忽然跑上前去向康庇禮嚷着
道:

"Mr. Campbell, you are wrong! 你和我們分別的時候應當說 good-bye, 怎麼還說 good morning 呢?何况現在已經快十二點了,還早什麼!"

過去在樂羣小學英文班上的時候,高鴻才就以胆大好說話出名。也許就是因為他胆大好說話的原故,所以他的英文成績

才能成為全班第一。康庇禮聽他問得很有道理,就詳細解釋給 他聽說:

『你這個問題問得很好!我現在且把'good morning'的用法詳細說給你聽。'good morning'和中國話的「你早呀」並不完全相同。「你早呀」的意思著重在「早」字上,所以只能在清早見面時說。'good morning'的意思著重在「早」字上,所以只能在清早見面時說。'good morning'的意思著重在'good'上,所以只要是在上午見面,都可以拿它來作問候的話。而且不但在相遇的時候可以說,就是在相別的時候也可以說。這也是因為意義重在'good',有請對方「保重」的意思。不過在相遇時的說法,重音要放在 morning 的第一音節上,在相別時的說法,重音要放在 good 上。同樣,在下午相遇或相別時可以說good afternoon; 在晚上相遇或相別時可以說 good evening,惟有 good night 一語,只能在晚上相別的時候說,在晚上相遇的時候是不能說的。』康庇禮說罷,便微笑着走出去了。

林祖義放學囘家後,他父親林廷清一見他就迎面問道:

『初中一的英文是誰教的呀?』

『那教員的英文名字叫 Kenneth Campbell,中文名字叫 康庇禮,是一位身材高大的人。』林祖義放下書包,很興奮地 說。

『那位康庇禮先生的英文教授法是很出名的。他到中國來 已經有二十多年了。我年青的時候時常聽有許多人稱讚他。你 覺得他教得難不難呢?』

『其實啓慧的英文也不算太難。凡寫在黑板上的我都看得 懂。只是康先生的英文說得太快,我聽不大清楚。幸虧有時他 說完英文後又補上一句中文,要不然可就稍了。』

『那倒不是他說得太快,乃是你聽得太慢了!』林廷淸笑 着對他兒子說。『因為你耳朵沒有聽慣,所以你暫時聽不淸楚 ,等你將來聽慣了,自然就可以全都聽得出來了。』

祖林義聽了這話雖沒有和他父親辯論,然而心裏却是很不 服氣。他心裏暗自想道:天下只有說話分快慢,聽話還有個快 慢嗎?他正想着,又聽他父親說道:

「從啓慧小學部升上來的學生們,一定都比你英文好了。』 『有一位 Miss Mu,英文特別好。凡是別人囘答不出來的問題,康先生只要問到她,她都能囘答得出來。』

『那一定是莫惠英。她的父親是一位牧師,也是我的熟人。莫惠英小時常到校長賴爾慈家裏去玩。賴校長夫婦二人都四十多歲了,身邊還沒有兒女,所以特別喜歡小孩子。賴師母看待莫惠英就如同自己的女兒一樣,每天親自教她英文,所以莫惠英的英文根底特別好。你是一位堂堂男子,假如你將來的英文成績趕不上一位女生,你的面子才眞不好看哩!』

林祖義聽了這番話,不由得又囘想起自己在英文班上那一陣窘態百出的情形,頓時臉就紅了起來。這時他母親已經將午飯拿出來,於是大家一齊坐下來吃午飯,談話暫時就中斷了。 林祖義一邊默默地吃飯,一邊心裏想道:父親剛才所說的話倒是個實際問題。如果將來自己的英文成績太壞,不但要被男同學笑話,就連女同學也要瞧不起了。不要說是為學問,就是為面子起見,今後對於英文這門功課也要賣點力氣,努力用一番功!

III. 英語會話要多少天才能學會呢?

這天星期六的下午,高中部的女生和初中部的女生比賽籃 辣。林祖義本來是不喜歡運動的,可是他覺得女學生賽球很稀 奇,所以他也特意跑去看。這時運動場上人已很多。選手們都 在熱心地練習,四周圍滿了觀看的人。林祖義看他班上的莫惠 英也是選手,還有那常和莫惠英在一塊的女生孫重美也是選手 。林祖義再向左邊看,但見校長 Mr. Niles, Mr. Campbell, 還有高中部的英文教員 Miss McClain, Mr. Bryan 等都在觀 看。不一會,有幾位高中部的學生走過去和他們談話。再過一 會,他看他班上的劉恆育、高鴻才、姜亮友也參加進去了。於 是他也不由得跑了過去。林祖義自從進了啓慧中學以後,對於 英文的確用功很動,而且他自己也覺得進步很快。現在他不但 差不多可以聽懂別人所說的話,他自己也可以對付着說幾句了 。他走到他們跟前時,但聽 Miss McClain。對旁邊站着的一個 學生說:

"You have to play some outdoor games. Qutdoor games are good for your health. When you play an outdoor game, you are in the open air. You can breathe good air and can have more sun than when you are in a room."

林祖義仔細看旁邊的那位學生,但見他那灰白瘦削的面孔上,沒有一點血色。雖只是二十歲左右的人,但背已作駝,腰也有點灣起來了。林祖義心裏想:像這種人,與是典型的『東亞病夫》,』怪不得 Miss McClain 耍勸他多作運動。但是那『東亞病夫』却囘答說:

"But I don't know what kind of game or sport I should (20) • 奕 文 因 學 記• choose to play.'

"There are many kinds of games and sports. Some of them are good only for very strong boys, but some are good for anybody. You should try to find out which game or sport will do you most good." Miss McClain 說 o

"Yes, there are many kinds of games and sports." Mr. Niles 在旁邊接下去說,"Basket-ball, football, tennis, baseball, volley-ball.……Chinese boys like to play football. Baseball is an American game. Tennis is also a popular game. It is much played not only by boys but also by girls. Now, not only boys but also girls are fond of playing games."

"'All work and no play makes Jack a dull boy.' Do you know that proverb?" Mr. Campbell 看林祖義在旁邊聽得出神,就笑着問他說。

"What does that mean?" 林祖義注意地問 Mr. Campbell. 他現在已經練習得可以說幾句話了。

"It means that if you only work and do nothing else, you will become a dull boy in the end." Mr. Campbell 解释給他聽。

正在這時,忽然有一個球飛過來,打在林祖義的腿上。林 祖義低身把球拾起來後,莫惠英也跑過來拿球了。林祖義將球 遞給莫惠英,彼此相對笑了一笑,但是彼此都沒有說一句話。 林祖義這時才看清楚,莫惠英嘴裏並沒有缺少一顆牙。那靠右 逸的上牙,有一顆生得不整齊,向裏邊陷下去一點,離遠了看 不清楚,就以為是缺少一顆似的。林祖義心裏想:『同學這許 多日子,每天坐在我身邊,怎麼到現在才看清楚呢?』 這時林祖義又聽 Mr. Bryan 對旁邊另外一位高中部的學生說:

"Do you like the study of English language?"

"Yes, I like it very much. English is the universal language. It is very useful." 那個鼻架深度近視眼鏡的高中部的學生回答說。

"That's true," Mr. Bryan 似乎很贊成他的見。"English is rapidly becoming a world language."

"I like to study English too," 旁邊一位矮個的學生插嘴 說。"But I don't find much time for studying it. I occupy myself with mathematics everyday."

"I have no taste for mathematics at all." 那戴近視眼鏡 的學生和他辯論起來。

這時 Mr. Campbell 乃問林祖義說:

"What do you think of your English lessons?".

"I find it very difficult." 林祖義囘答說。

"You write better than you speak." Mr. Campbell 好像是稱證他,也好像是安慰他。

"Yes, it's the pronunciation that puzzles me." 林祖義 連忙說。

"Do you understand me well?" Mr. Campbell 問他。

"I feel that you speak too fast. I can't understand you unless you speak slowly." 林和義大胆地說出了自己的意見。

"Well, 1'll be careful of it." Mr.Campbell 說着,就自己笑起來了。

"How long will it take me to learn English conversation?" 林祖義緊接着問康庇禮。

"Well, you can be at home after two or three years' practice. Practice makes perfect. Practice is the only way to master conversation." 康庇禮說。

"But I get so few oppertunities of speaking English. I shall never be able to speak English well." 林祖義熱心向學的情緒感動了康庇禮。康庇禮於是連安慰帶鼓勵他似地說:

"You have made great progress already. Diligent as you are, I think you will get on still more. Speak English whenever you have the chance. Never be afraid of making mistakes."

他們談話談到這裏,球賽已經開始了。於是他們停止了談話,大家一齊看賽球。

Mr. Bryan 會經參加過第一次歐戰,右腿受了傷,所以是一個跛子。他是一個獨身者,已經快四十歲了,還沒有結婚。他不堪寂寞的結果,於是養了一條心愛的狗,彼此書夜相隨。他每天到學校來的時候,那狗也隨他一同來。他在教室裏上課,那狗就坐在教室門外等他;下了課,彼此再一同囘去。今天Mr. Bryan 來看賽球,那狗當然也是跟他一同來的。那狗也實在是太聰明了,牠看女學生們在搶球,牠也跑上去搶球。Mr. Bryan 看見了,大聲喝道:

"Jack! Jack! Come back!"

那狗聽見主人叫牠,就趕快跑同來,坐在牠主人的面前,不敢再去搗亂了。從那天起,林祖義才知那狗名叫 Jack.

籃球比賽的結果,初中部以十分對十五分敗於高中部。初中部的學生都很掃與。高中部的學生們大聲歡呼了一會也都散去了。校長 Niles 請選手們到他家裏去吃茶,順便邀了站在旁邊的許多男生們作陪,於是林祖義也被邀了去。到了 Niles 家 • 英語會都要多少天才能學會呢? • (23)

裏,Mrs. Niles 親自出來招待。他們用着茶點,隨意談矣。在那傍晚晴朗的空氣裏,各人的喉音都好像顯得格外響亮。而且大家都把中文和英文混合着說,一種難以形容的中面和協的趣味充滿了整個客廳。林祖義正在熱心想學會話,對於這種集會也格外覺得有輿趣。他向康庇禮提議,要在平常課程中的文法和讀本之外,加上一種會話。但是康庇禮却對他說,會話這件事情主要是個練習問題。只要文法弄清楚了,字彙詞藻記得多了,加以相當時期的練習以後,會話是很容易學成功的。反過來說,如果文法弄不清,語彙記得太少,就是想練習也無從練習。因此康庇禮勸林祖義平常多在文法和語彙上用功夫,至於會話,只要遇到有練習的機會,就隨時抓住利用,不要輕易放過,那就夠了。

『不過有些極普通的口頭上應酬的話,我現在不妨告訴你一點,』康庇禮對林祖義說。『譬如說,朋友相遇,彼此問候,最普通的說法是:

"How do you do?"

"Very well, thank you. How are you?" 這時坐在對面遠處的 Mr. Niles 聽見他倆在研究會話研究得很起勁,不由得就抵進了嘴,將 Mr. Campbell 所說的話接了下去。

"How are you getting on?" Mr. Campbell 又追問了一句。

"Never better, thank you." Mrs. Niles 接過來說。

"How are you getting along?" Miss McClain 又問了一句。

"Thank you, I am perfectly well.", Mr. Bryan 回答說。 "How is world treating you?" 莫惠英坐在 Mr. Bryan 的身邊,用手摸著狗的耳朵,說。

- "Pretty well, thanks." —個高中部的男生接過來說。
- "How is your health?" 一個女生問。
- "Oh, I am quite all right." —個男生囘答。
- "I am glad to hear it." 又一個男生說。
- "How are your family?" 坐在莫惠英身邊的孫重美問。
- "They are all well at home." 林祖義囘答說。
- "Kindly remember me to your family." 初中一的劉 恆育說。
- "Please remember me kindly to your father." 高鴻才 說。
 - "Give my kind regards to your mother." 姜亮友說。
- "Give my kindest remembrance to your wife." —個高中部的學生說。
 - "How does everything go with you?" 一個女生問。
 - "Not very well, I'm afraid." —個男生囘答。
 - 'I'm sorry to hear that. What's the matter?" 又一個女生問。
 - "I suppose it's just a cold." 又一個男生回答。
- "You'd better take care of yourself." 康庇禮忽然又打破了沉寂。
 - "How are you feeling now?" 林祖義問。
 - "I am feeling very poorly." 高鴻才囘答說。
 - "Are you getting better?" 刻恆育問。
 - "Much better, thanks." 姜亮友說。
- "Please give me a cake." 莫惠英忽然改變了談話的方式 ,伸手向 Mrs. Niles 要點心。莫惠英覺得 Mrs. Niles 就同自己的母親是一樣,是用不着客氣的。
 - 英語會話要多少天才能學會呢? •

*'I beg your pardon?' Mrs. Niles 却和莫惠英開玩笑,装着沒有聽淸她的話,反問她說的是什麼。不過實際上 Mrs. Niles 已經走過去,將點心送到莫惠英的手裏了。

"Give me a cake, please." 坐在莫惠英身邊的孫重美表而上是模仿莫惠英所說的話,實際上也是眞想吃點心。

"Beg your pardon?" Mrs. Niles 笑着,又將點心送給 孫重美一塊。

"Will you please give me a cake?" Miss McClain 也要起點心來了。

"Beg pardon?" 於是 Mrs Niles 叉送給 Miss McClain 一塊。

"Will you kindly give me a cake?" 康庇禮也笑着要點心。

"I beg your pardon?" 於是康庇禮也得了一塊。

"Will you be good enough to give me a cake?" Mr... Bryan 也要吃了。

"Beg your pardon?" 於是 Mr. Bryan 也吃着了。

"Will you be kind enough to give me a cake?"—個高中部的鼻架近視眼鏡的學生說。

"Beg pardon?" Mrs. Niles 笑着,假裝沒有聽清他的話 ,但是點心却是認真送到他手裏的。

"Have the kindness to give me a cake."又一個女生說。 "Beg your pardon?"

"May I trouble you to give me a cake?" 又一個男生 說。

"Beg pardon?"

會話才暫時告一段落。康庇禮看大家只顧吃點心,會話一時無 人繼續,他覺得這樣好的會話課程,若從此告終,未免可惜, 於是他又設法引起話頭,開始說一句道:

- "I want you to do me a favour."
- "Yes, with great pleasure." 莫惠英連忙接下去說。於是那暫時沉寂了片刻的會話研究班又頓形活躍起來。
 - "Many thanks."
 - "Not at all."
 - "I want to ask a favour of you."
 - "I can refuse you no favour."
 - "Many best thanks."
 - "Not a bit."
 - "I have a favour to ask you, if you can do it."
 - "It will be a great pleasure to do anything for you."
 - "Thank you for your kindness."
 - "Not in the least."
 - "Do me a favour, will you?"
 - "I shall be so glad, if I can be of some use to you."
 - "I feel greatly indebted to you."
 - "Don't mention it."
 - "Will you do me a favour?"
 - "I will do anything I can."
 - "Much obligated."
 - "Oh, certainly not."
 - "I have come to ask a favour of you."
 - "I will do my best for you."
 - "Very much obliged."
 - 英語會話淚多少天才能學會呢? •

- "Oh, never mind,"
- "I beg your pardon for disturbing you."
- "You need not mind."
- "Excuse me for my troubling you with such a matter."
- "It's nothing."
- "I am sorry to trouble you often."
- "It's all right."
- "I am sorry to have kept you waiting so long
- "Please don't apologize."

話說到這裏,沒有人再能接得上去,好像大家的會話材料 是用完了似的。於是屋內又暫時歸於沉寂。

高鴻才的一塊點心,吃了一半,剩下一半放在盤子裏。 Mr. Bryan 的狗跑來,伸過頭去,將鼻子放在那半塊點心上聞了一聞。劉恆育看見了,趕忙用手去揮狗,一個不留神,將點心盤子揮落在地下,打得紛碎。 Mrs, Niles 連忙說 "Never mind," 趕快跑過來,就把碎盤子拾去了。但是高鴻才却裝出生氣的樣子來喚着道:

- "How did you make that out?"
- "I am sick and tired of speaking to you!" 劉恆育也裝出生氣的口吻,絲毫不退讓。
 - "You had better look out, sirrah!" 高鴻才說。
 - "Nonesense!" 劉恆育說。

這時大家看他倆裝着吵起架來,不由得都笑了。但有一個 男生却接着說,

- "Why are you angry with me?"
- "You spoke evil of me behind my back!" 又一個男生說。

"You called me names!"另外—個男生說。於是男生們大聲地吵罵着,女生們吃吃地掩口笑着,一場熱烈底英語會話 又開始了。

```
"You ought to be ashamed, stupid donkey!"
```

在女生和教員們的笑聲中,這場吵罵到此才算告一段落。

• 英語會話要多少天才能學會呢? •

[&]quot;It is none of your business!"

[&]quot;You are a nuisance!"

[&]quot;Lazy hound!"

[&]quot;Why do you make a wry face?"

[&]quot;Why do you pout?"

[&]quot;Don't make faces at me!"

[&]quot;Don't make fool of me!"

[&]quot;You are telling transparent lies!"

[&]quot;You are a terrible lier!"

[&]quot;Every word yau say is a lie!"

[&]quot;You are telling lies to my very face!"

[&]quot;You fool!"

[&]quot;You blockhead!"

[&]quot;I shall choke with anger!"

[&]quot;My patience is exhausted!"

[&]quot;I could not contain myself for anger!"

[&]quot;Don't talk rubbish!"

[&]quot;Hold your tongue!"

[&]quot;Don't talk such stuff!"

[&]quot;Outrageous!"

[&]quot;Get out of my sight; you rascal!"

[&]quot;Get away, you young dog!"

康庇禮却向大家說:

『這些罵人 (calling names) 的話,你們學會了,只可記在心裏,備而不用,萬不可常常放在嘴邊上說的。』

天色漸漸黑暗,大家一齊向 Niles 夫婦告辭,各自囘家。 林祖義走過康庇顧的家,康庇顧向他說:

『你且等一等,我有一件東西給你。』

林祖義站在門口等着,不一會康庇禮走出來,將手裏拿着 的一張紙遞給林祖義說:

『這是一張會話裏所常用的縮寫字類表,是我從前教會話時所印的講義,你可以拿一份去看看。』

林祖義稱謝後告辟了康庇禮回家。晚飯後他在燈上將那張 講義打開來一看,原來是這樣的一份縮寫字類表:

(30)

英文困舉記:

```
5. { it's = it is, or it has. it'd = it had, or it would. it'll = it will
 they're = they are
they've = they have
they'd = they had, or they would.
          they'll = they will
 8. \begin{cases} \text{boy's} = \text{boy is, or boy has.} \\ \text{boy'd} = \text{boy had, or boy would.} \\ \text{boy'll} = \text{boy will} \end{cases}
 girls're = girls are
girls've = girls have
girls'd = girls had, or girls would.
girls'll = girls will
there's = there is, or there has.
there,d = there had, or there would.
there've = there have
there'll = there will
       (that's = that is, or that has.
that's = that is, of that had
that'll = that will
this'd = this had, or this would.
this'll = this will
      英語會話要多少天才能學會呢? •
                                                                                                  (31)
```

```
(what's = what is, or what has.
what're = what are
what've = what have
what'd = what had, or what would.
         what'll = what will
who's = who is, or who has.
who're = who are
who've = who have
who'd = who had, or who would.
who'll = who will
        (how's = how is, or how has
how're = how are

14. \{\text{how've} = \text{how have} \}
        how'd = how had, or how would.
         how'll = how will
        where's = where is, or where has.
where're = where are
where've = where have
where'd = where had,
where'll = where will
why's = why is, or why has.

why're = why are

why've = why have

why'd = why had
```

•英文困學即•

(32)

```
when's = when is, or when has.
when're = when are
when've = when have
when'll = when will
           flet's = let us
here's = here is sh'll = shall sh'd = should 'tis = it is
           \int isn't = is not
aren't = are not

wasn't = was not

weren't = were not

ain't = am not
20. \begin{cases} don't = do \text{ not} \\ doesn't = does \text{ not} \\ didn't = did \text{ not} \end{cases}
           (haven't = have not
 21. \begin{cases} \text{hasn't} = \text{has not} \\ \text{hadn't} = \text{had not} \end{cases}
22. \begin{cases} shan't = shall \text{ not} \\ shouldn't = should \text{ not} \end{cases}
 23. \begin{cases} won't = will \text{ not} \\ wouldn't = would \text{ not} \end{cases}
 24. \begin{cases} can't = can \text{ not} \\ couldn't = could \text{ not} \end{cases}
    • 英語會話要多少天才能學會呢? •
```

(33)

- 25. $\begin{cases} mayn't = may \text{ not} \\ mightn't = might \text{ not} \end{cases}$
- 26. { oughtn't = ought not mustn't = must not
- 27. $\begin{cases} needn't = need \text{ not} \\ daren't = dare \text{ not} \end{cases}$

IV. 受了戰事的影響

在啓慧中學所在地 H 縣的東方二三十里,有個 P 鎮,是交通上的耍道,每次內戰時都為兵家所必爭。有一次,內戰的 砲火波及到 P 鎮來,在 H 縣可以聽到股股的砲聲。縣城裏的 人民很驚慌,白日裏家家關門閉戶,沒有人敢外出。街上停了市,學校也停了課。過了有一星期,戰事向北移去,H縣的市面恢復了常態,啓慧中學也才漸漸復課。但在復課之初,學生們驚魂未定,大家都無心讀書。可是康庇禮先生教書向來很認 真,學校一復了課,他就照常上課了。他每次到教室去都很早,上課鐘一敲完,他就在教室的門口出現了。這天也是上課的 鐘聲落音未久,他就跨進了教室去。教室裏一片骤嚷底聲音,學生們都正在談話。

"Good morning, class!" 康庇證高聲地說,想壓倒學生 們的談話聲音。

"Good morning, Mr. Campbell!" 全班學生都一齊說。 但是數室裏照舊嚷嚷,一片談話聲。

"Keep quiet, please! I will call the roll." 康庇禮先生 用手敲著桌子, 叫學生們安靜。

學生們這才漸漸安靜下來,於是康庇禮先生開始點名。點 完了名,康庇禮看學生未到的很多,不由得驚嘆着說:

"Many are absent!"

康庇禮於是打開書,對學生們說:

"Now, let's begin our lesson. Open your book at page thirty-three. Mr. Li, Will you please read it for us?" 康庇 證對坐在左邊一個姓李的學生說。

"Mr. Campbell, I have forgotten to bring my book."

• 受了戰事的影響。

那個姓李的學生站起來說。

"That's bad," 康庇禮說; "Don't forget to bring your book when you come to class. You should be careful next time."

康庇禮又對另外一位姓張的學生說:

"Mr. Chang, will you please read it for us?"

那姓張的學生站起來,對手裏拿着的書低頭看了一會,忽 然對康庇禮說:

"I am sorry, Mr. Campbell. I haven't prepared my lesson."

"Why? You should prepare your lesson before you come to class." Haven't I told you to prepare this lesson last time?" 康庇禮說。

"I had a severe headache last night." 那姓張的學生說。

"Is that true?" 康庇禮懷疑地問。

"All right. You may sit down. I hope you will take good care of yourself."

於是康庇禮又問另外—個學生說:

"Mr. Yang, have you prepared your lesson?"

"I haven't too." 那姓楊的學生說。

"Why haven't all of you prepared your lessons?" 康庇 讀看大家都沒有好好預備功課,心裏不免有點發急起來。

於是莫惠英對康庇禮解釋道:

"A war was fought not far away from us. We were greatly terrified. Now, though the war is over, we still feel uneasy when we think about it. We cannot study our lessons well unless we become perfectly composed."

"Oh, I see. You may be excused." 康庇禮聽了點頭會 意說。"War is really horrible. I also hate it."

"The bullets and shells passed over my house like shooting stars. They shrilled while dashing. But I was not afraid. I stood in the court and watched them in the night." 坐在後面的一框學生說。

"One morning I stood in front of a window and combed my hair. A stray bullet suddenly hit the wall beside the window. Though the wall was not pierced by the bullet, I was terribly frightened" 前面又有一個學生嚷着說。

"Now the war is over. You must try to compose yourself and study your lessons by heart. Next week we shall have the second monthly examination." 康庇禮對學生們說。

"Examination is really a nuisance!" 坐在莫惠英身後的 孫重美感慨無限地說。 "I shudder at the mere idea of examination."

"I hate examination too. It does not do us much good. Can we abolish it?" 莫惠英接着說。

"No, we can't abolish it for the time being, although I don't think highly of it either." 康庇禮說。 "Well, let us not waste too much time on idle talks. We had better turn to our book. Mr. Lin, I think you have prepared your lesson. Read it for us please." 康庇禮對林祖義說。

林祖義自進了啓慧中學以後對於英文非常用功,所以很為 康庇禮所重視。這時大家都不會念,康庇禮乃特意叫林祖義念 。林祖義於是站起來,捧着那本五十較事念道:

Bruce And The Spider

- (1) There was once a king of Scotland whose name was Robert Bruce. He had need to be both brave and wise, for the times in which he lived were wild and rude. The King of England was at war with him, and had led a great army into Scotland to drive him out of the land.
- (2) Battle after battle had been fought. Six times had Bruce led his brave little army against his foes; and six times had his men been beaten, and driven into flight. At last his army was scattered, and he was forced to hide himself in the woods and in lonely places among the mountains.
- (3) One rainy day, Bruce lay on the ground under a rude shed, listening to the patter of the drops on the roof above him. He was tired and sick at heart, and ready to give up all hope. It seemed to him that there was no use for him to try to do anything more.
- (4) As he lay thinking, he saw a spider over his head, making ready to weave her web. He watched her as she toiled slowly and with great care. Six times she tried to throw her frail thread from one beam to another, and six times it fell short.
- (5) "Poor thing!" said Bruce; "You, too, know what it is to fail."
- (6) But the spider did not lose hope with the sixth failure. With still more care, she made ready to try for

the seventh time. Bruce almost forgot his own troubles as he watched her swinging herself out upon the slender line. Would she fail again? No! The thread was carried safely to the beam, and fastened there.

- (7) "I, too, will try a seventh time!" Cried Bruce.
- (8) He arose and called his men together. He told them of his plans, and sent them out with messages of cheer to his disheartened people. Soon there was an army of brave Scotchmen around him. Another battle was fought, and the King of England was glad to go back into his own country.
- (9) I have heard it said, that, after that day, no one by the name of Bruce would ever hurt a spider. The lesson which the little creature had taught the king was never forgotten."

"That will do. Sit down please." 康庇看禮林祖義念完 後就對林祖義說。 "Your reading is pretty good in the general, except that you read a little too fast. Remember that when you read the next time, read slowly and distinctly."

"Have you any questions about this lesson?" 康庇證 又問。

"Oh, there are many things which I do not understand." 林祖義趕忙說。『那第二句裏 He had need to be....... 那 need 的用法對於我好像是很生疏;還有那 for the times........ 那 times 為甚麼要加 s 呢?』林祖義恐怕自己用英文說不清楚,終於用中國話問了出來。

『你的問題問得很好,』康庇禮很高與地用中國話囘答他 o 『need 這個字的用法本來有點討厭,初學的人是不大容易弄 清楚的。 need 這個個字當動詞用的時候,後面的 infinitive 有時可以不用 to, 在文法上的性質就和 can, may, will, shall 那些助動詞是一樣。譬如說: It need be explained; He need not come; Need she obey? 這三句話裏的 subject 雖都是第三 人單數,也不能用 needs, 只能用 need, 因為 need 是助動詞, 主要的動詞是 be, come, obey 三個字。但 need 這個字有時地 可以當主要動詞用,譬如說: It needs no explanation; She needs to be careful; I need money; He does not need money. 在這裏 need 是當主要動詞用的,所以第三人單數都 加 s. 現在書上的這句話 He had need to be both brave and wise. 在這裏 need 是當名詞用的, 這和 He needed to be both brave and wise 是一樣的意思。至於 time 這個字,加 s 的時 候也很多。譬如 three times (三次), many times (許多次) , at times (有時), ten times higher (較高十倍), ancient times (古代), prehistoric times (史前時代), the good old times (已往;過去)等。在書上的那個 times 也是作「時代」 解的。』康庇禮說到這裏又問林祖義道:

"To what Part of Speech does the word 'for belong?" 林祖義想了一會,沒有想出來。康庇禮告訴他那是 conjunction,是將兩個 clause (子句)連成一個 sentence (句)的。於是康庇禮繼續解釋下去道:

『第三句裏 at war with 是一個成語,意思就是作戰,打仗。第二段裏第二句 had Bruce led his brave little army 是一種倒轉句,它的源序應當是 Bruce had led his brave little army. 不過為加重器氣起見,所以把 had 移到主語的前面去。

這和疑問語法的次序是一樣,但並不是疑問語法,你們要特別留心弄清楚,不可混亂了。第三段第二句裏面的 and ready to give up all hope, 那 give up —個 phrase 也是一個成語,意思是「放棄」,是很常用的,你們應當記住。第四段裏有什麼地方不懂的嗎?』康庇禮問大家。

停了一會莫惠英問道:

『第四段裏第二句 He watched her as she toiled slowly and with great care, 那 and 是連接那兩部份的?』

『這個問題問得有思想極了。』康庇禮又禁不住喜歡起來。『She toiled slowly and with great care, 「她慢慢地而且很小地勞動着」,slowly 形容 toiled, with great care 也形容 toiled. slowly 是 adverb; with great care 是 adverbial phrase. 'and'這個 conjunction 就是把一個 adverb 和一個 adverbial phrase 連接在一起的。這句話裏,除 and 以外, 還有一個 conjunction, 誰能看得出來是那一個字?』

『還有 as 那個字也是 conjunction,』莫惠英說。『 as 是 將 He watched her 這前面的 clause, 和 she toiled slowly and with great care 那後面的 clause 連接在一塊的。』

『對了!對了!』康庇禮稱讚着說。『還有那最後的 fell, short, 也是一個成語,是「不到,不足」的意思,也是很常用的。』

『還有一件事情,我要特別請大家注意的,』康庇禮稍停了一會之後又接下去說,『你們且看那第二段第一句 Battle after battle had heen fought. 這 had been fought 在文法上叫做什麼一種用法?』

『這叫做 passive voice (受動格),是和 active voice (主動格)相對而言的。』

『對了!』康庇禮說。『這種 passive voice 過去我們也講 過一點,也許有的人已經記不清楚了。我們現在再來詳細講一 番。英文裏的動詞,普通可以分成三種,就是 transitive verb (及物動詞), intransitive verb (不及物動詞), auxiliary verb(助動詞)。現在各舉幾個例說明。』康庇禮於是在黑板 上寫下:

1.	transitive verbs:	I teach you English.
	teach, study,	You study English. We eat bread.
	eat, kill,	He kills a tiger.
2.	intransitive verbs:	Birds fly.
		The boy walks.
	fly, walk, sleep,	He slept.
	die,	All men die.
3.	auxiliary verbs:	Birds can fly.
		You may study English.
	can, may, will,	He will sleep.
	shall,	I shall teach you.

『在上面所述的三種動詞中,transitive verb 有兩種用法 :一種是 active voice, 還有一種是 passive voice. 現在再舉例 說明。』於是康庇禮又寫下:

Active voice: Passive voice: 1. Bread is eaten by us. 1. We eat bread. 2. A tiger was killed by him. 2. He killed a tiger. 3. You will study English. 3. English will be studied by you. (42)

• 英文困學記•

- 4. I have written a letter. | 4. A letter has been written by me.
- 5. I am reading this book | 5. This book is being read by me. 康庇禮寫完後又說道:

『這裏所當注意的,是由 active voice 轉變成 passive voice 的辦法。一句話由 active voice 轉變成 passive voice, 有三件重要的事情應當記字: (1) active voice 裏面的 object. 變成 passive voice 裏面的 subject; active voice 裏面的 subject 變成 passive voice 裏面的 preporitional phrase. (2) active voice 裏面的主要動詞,無論它是什麼 tense(時制),到了 passive voice 裏面完全變成 past participle (過去分詞)。(3) 在這些 pis participle的前面,要再加上 verb, to be',像 am. is, are, was, shall be, will be, has been, have been 等類的字 。這些 verb 'to be' 的 tense, 要和 active voice 裏面動詞的 tense 相一致。除了上述這三件重要的事情以外,還有兩個要 注意的地方。你們看那第五句, progressive tense 在 passive voice 裏的表現法是加上 being 一個字。這是應當注意的。還 有,那 active voice 裏面的 subject,到了 passive voice 裏面 以後,雖常變成'by—'這樣的 phrase, 但是這'by—'是常常 可以省略或不說明的。譬如: A tiger was killed. A letter is written. 在這裏只說是「虎被殺掉了,」「信被寫好了,」至 於是被誰殺的和被誰寫的,並沒有說出來。英文中的 passive voice 常常都是這樣的。這也是應當注意的地方。......』康庇 禮說到這裏,稍停一停,然後又說:

『我們今天所念的這課書裏面,有很多 passive voice 的 動詞,大家下課囘家後,各人都仔細從這誤書裏面把 passive voice 的動詞找出來,期天上課時,我們舉行一個小小的考試 ,看誰找得對,誰找得不對。**』**

學生們聽說明天要舉行考試,各人的臉色都顯得緊張起來 。於是大家一齊低下頭去,注意看自己的書。康庇禮又說:

『今天所念的這課書,那後面幾段裏,還有什麼不明白的 地方嗎?』

康庇禮剛問完這話,下課鐘就敲了起來。康庇禮於是站起 來說:

"The bell is ringing. We must stop here. **Let's** learn the rest for next time." 康庇禮說完,就走出去了。

林祖義囘家後,立刻就用功從他今天所學的那課書裏去找passive voice 的動詞。第二段第一句 Battle after battle had been fought, 這是康庇禮已經說明過的了。那第二句 and six times had his men been beaten, and driven into flight, 這裏面 had been beaten and driven 是兩個 passive voice 的動詞。第三句 At last his army was scattered, and he was forced to hide him in the woods, 這裏面 was scattered 和 was forced 也是兩個 passive voice. 他接着往下找,找到第六段的末一句 The thread was carried safely to the beam, and fastened there, 又發現了 was carried 和 fastened. 他想那 fastened 前面的was 一定是省略了的,原來的形式一定是 was fastened. 在第八段的末句裏他發現了 Another battle was fought; 又在末段的末句發現了 was never forgotten. 他於是把含有 passive voice 動詞的句子全部很清楚地抄寫在紙上,並在動詞下面劃了線。

- 1. Battle.....had been fought.
- 2.his men had been beaten, and (had been) driven into flight.
- 3.his army was scattered, and he was forced to(44)交交压學記・

hide himself.....

- 4. The thread was carried safely to the beam, and (was) fastened there.
 - 5. Another battle was fought.....
 - 6. The lesson.....was never forgotten.

林祖義寫完後,默默看了一會覺得裏面全部沒有"by—"那樣的 phrase,他於是立刻想起了康庇禮所說的話:『在 passive voice 的句子裏,'by—'這樣的 phrase 是常常省略了不說出來的。』他將六個句子放在心裏默默記住,第二天早晨與高彩烈地到學校去。他想:『這次考試,我總要得個一百分!』

他走到學校門口,看見門口有兩個兵守衛,他不免怔住了。『這是怎麼一囘事呢?那裏來的兵呢?』他一邊想着,慢慢 走進門,那兩個兵也沒有阻止地。他進了門,看學校院子裏盡 是兵,飢嚷嚷地走着。他還沒有走到教室,迎面就遇見了劉恆 育。他趕忙問劉恆育道:

『這是怎麼囘事?學校裏怎麼來了這許多兵?』

『你還不知道嗎?』劉恆育對他說。『昨天傍晚從 P 鎮開來許多軍隊,把全城各處的廟宇都住滿了,結果還是住不下,所以只好來住學校。校長已經出了佈告叫暫時停課,等兵隊開走了以後再上課。將來如果學校還不夠住的話,說不定還要住民房呢!』

『這眞叫做不走運!』林祖義聽了憤憤地說。『我昨晚預備功課預備到半夜,把書裏所有的 passive voice 都記熟了,本打算今天來考個一百分,誰知今天遇見了這樣的事情,功課又不考了。昨晚與是白費了一番功!』

林祖義和劉恆育談着話,從溫擊墜的兵士中間,一同走出 了校門,各自回安去。

V. 满牆的英文字

學校既駐上了軍隊,林祖義不能到學校去上課,只好在家 裏自修。但是一個人獨學,很難提起與趣,有時看書看了不久 ,就厭倦起來了。這天他溫習英文舊課,遇到了有幾個不明白 的地方,他想:『我何不到康庇禮家裏去玩玩呢?一則可以解 解悶,二則可以跟他補習點功課。康庇禮平常對我的印象很不 錯呀!』

他傍晚到康庇禮家裏去的時候,却遇見莫惠英也在那裏。 她拿着一本書,坐在康庇禮的身邊讀着,康庇禮好像正在講解 書上的意思給她聽。康庇禮一見了林祖義就向他說:

"How are you getting along, Mr. Lin?"

"Quite well, thank you, Mr. Campbell, "林祖義說。 "Everyday I stay at home and review my lessons. But I find it very dull to study by myself. There are many hard words which I do not understand."

"Come to me whenever you like. I'll help you at any time." 康庇禮說罷就吩咐他家裏的人預備茶點。不一會,有一個小女孩拿出茶點來,遞給林祖義。康庇禮指着那小女孩向林祖義介紹說:

"This is my daughter, Catherine."

"Catherine 聰明得很哩!"莫惠英也向林祖義說,『她今年才四歲,就會唱很多的歌了。』莫惠英於是又向 Catherine 說:

"Sing a song for us, Catherine. Will you?"
Catherine 聽了, 低頭弄着自己的小手指, 不作聲。
"Yes, sing a song for us, Catherine," 康庇禮也催促
(*46)
• 类 文 因 學 紀 •

她o

Catherine 聽她父親也叫她唱歌,就問道:

"Whet shall I sing? Sing Little Tommy?"

"All right! You may sing that for us" 康庇禮向她說。

Catherine 於是站正了身子,將兩隻小手交在胸前,昂頭唱道:

Little Tommy Tucker
Sings for his supper.
What shall we give him?
White bread and butter.
How can he cut it
Without a little knife?
How can he marry

Without a little wife?

Catherine 唱記, 莫惠英和林祖義都拍手笑了起來, 連聲 稱讚她唱得好。 Catherine 跑去倚在她父親的腿上, 得意地 微笑着。康庇禮向林祖義說:

『這歌裏的意思都能懂得罷?』

『大概都能懂得,』林祖義說,『因為歌裏面的字都是很容易的。那 supper 不是「晚飯」的意思嗎?』

『是呀,supper 就是「晚飯」的意思。』康庇禮說。『談起每天吃飯的這件事情來,因為中外風俗習慣的不同,話就是了。你們都知道早飯叫 breakfast, 那是沒有問題的。惟有這餐午飯,因為普通一般中國人都叫它做 dinner, 於是學生們就認為 dinner 的意思是午飯。其實那是不對的。 dinner 這個字的定義是:the chief meal of the day, whether eaten in the

middle of the day or in the evening. 由此可見 dinner 的意 思是:一天裏最主要的那一餐飯,並不一定限於在午間。有時 dinner 是在晚間吃的。在英美的社會裏,大概凡勞工和中下 流階級的人,每天吃飯的次序是這樣的: breakfast (在早晨) , dinner (在任間), tea (在下午四五點鐘), supper (在夜 間)。至於中上流社會或有閒階級的人士,每天吃飯的次序是 這樣的: breakfast (在早晨), lunch (在午間), tea (在下 午四五點鐘), dinner (在晚上), supper (在夜裏)。由此可 見 breakfast 的定義是: the first meal of the day. lunch 的 定義是: a meal taken in the middle of the day (between breakfast and dinner). supper 的定義是: the last meal of the day. tea 的定義是: a light meal in the aftenoon, at which tea is drunk, 就是中國所謂茶點的意思。還有 luncheon 一個字,意思和 lunch 是一樣的,不過是: a more formal word for lunch. 此外尚有 tiffin 一個字, 也是 lunch 的意思,不過多半在英屬印度方面使用。另外還有兩個字,也 和吃飯有關係的,那就是 feast 和 banquet 兩個字。 feast 有 兩個意思:一個是「過節」: a day of rejoicing in memory of an important event; a festival. 還有一個意思是「宴會」: a splendid meal with many good things to eat and drink. 至於 banquet 這個字則多半指宴會而言: a feast, especially an official dinner to celebrate something, at which speeches are made. 以上所說的這許多字你們如果都能記清楚,關於吃 飯的種種類別,你們總可有個大略的概念了。』康庇禮說了很 長的時間才說完。

『What shall we give him? White bread and butter. bread 是麵包, butter 是牛奶油,這些字我們是早已都知道 的了○』林淵義說♂

『bread 這個字本來的意思是麵包,但往往轉成「生活」 的意思,這一層你們也知道嗎?』康庇禮亞。『譬如這句話: I earn my bread by teaching. 這就是說:我以教書來維持生 活。又如: He takes the bread out of my mouth. 這是說: 他斷絕我的生路。還有, bread 這個字是不能過數的。不能說 a bread, two breads, 等等。如果要想過數,必須另外加上別 的字。譬如:a loaf of bread (一個整塊麵包), two slices of bread (兩整片麵包), three pieces of bread (三碎片麵包), 等等。還有一句諺語,說: half a loaf is better than no bread,「有半塊麵包,也比沒有的強,」這是說「少勝於無」 的意思。至於 butter 這個字,你們只知道是名詞,可知道它 也能當動詞用嗎?譬如說: I butter a slice of bread (我將一 片麵包上塗上牛奶油)。還有一句諺語說: to know on which side one's bread is buttered, 這話的意思就是說: to know who or what will be of most advantage to oneself (知道自 己的利益何在)。這裏面的 is buttered 在文法上叫做什麽用法 ?』康庇醴問。

『這是 passive voice, 我們才學過不久啊!』林祖義說。 『對呀?你對於 passive voice 可以說是完全了解了。』 康庇禮稱證他。『還有一句成語,譬如說: He looks as if butter would not melt in his mouth. 這句話是什麼意思?』 康庇禮用眼望着林祖義,林祖義囘答不出來;康庇禮又轉過臉 去望莫惠英,莫惠英說:

"That means: He is very gentle."

『是呀!那就是形容他非常温柔的。』康庇禮說。 『How can he cut it without a little knife? 關於 knife 這個字還有沒有什麼成語呢?』林祖義問。

『怎麼沒有呢?』 康庇禮說 。 『譬如說: war to the knife, 意思是說: war without mercy, 又如: get one's knife into a person, 意思是: make a fierce attack upon a person. 還有: before one could say knife, 意思是說: very quickly or suddenly.』

『How can he marry without a little wife? wife 的意思是「妻」, husband and wife 的意思就是「夫妻」。』林祖錢說着,就用眼去看莫惠英,莫惠英趕忙低下頭去。

『Wife 這個字現在只是當「妻」講,但在古時候還可以當「婦人」講,意思就是 any woman,』康庇禮說。『不過這種用法,現在已經是不常見了,只有在一些 compounds (複合字)裏面,還可以看得出來。譬如: housewife(家庭主婦), midwife (接生婆), fishwife (賣魚婦),等等。說到 husband and wife 這一類的字,有意思得很哪!』康庇禮於是將一杯可可茶 显起來一飲而盡,然後再繼續慢慢地說下去。

『英文襄頭,有些字是指夫妻任何一方而言的。譬如像mate, helpmate, partner, spouse等。在中文襄頭,也同樣有這一類的字。譬如現在中國新式的夫婦彼此稱「侶件」,「終身的侶件」。年老的夫婦稱「老件」。俗話襄稱「妻」為「老婆」。在生意人方面,丈夫是「掌櫃的」,妻子就是「老闆娘」。還有些鄉下農夫和下流階級的人們,妻子稱丈夫為「外頭人」,丈夫稱妻子為「裏頭人」。在中上流的社會襄,妻子對人稱自己的丈夫稱「夫君」,稱「外子」。丈夫對人稱自己的妻室稱「內人」,「內子」,或稱「賤內」,稱「拙荆」。尊稱人家的丈夫則稱之為「先生」

「大人」,「老爺」,或「當家的」。尊稱人家的妻子則稱之為 「太太」,「夫人」,「嫂夫人」,還有稱「先生娘子」的。中國的社 會也與是個宗法社會,關於家族和親戚這一類的語彙也真多。 譬如英文裏 uncle, aunt, cousin 這三個字,到了中文裏就可 以分門別類演變成這許多字:伯父、叔父、舅父、姑父、姨父 ;伯母、婚母、舅母、姑母、姨母;堂兄、堂弟、堂姊、堂妹 表兄、表弟、表姊、表妹、姨兄、姨弟、姨姊、姨妹。像中文 裏這許多稱謂,真是一個個清清楚楚,彼此毫無混淆紊亂的毛 病。在這一點上,英文實在不如中文。中國人能把關於宗族這 一部份的語文弄得這樣完備,也可見得中國人對於宗族觀念的 深切了。』康庇禮說到這裏又叫他的女兒 Catherine 去倒上 一杯可可茶來,他又一飲而盡。他喝完後又繼續說:

『關於 husband and wife 的話,我還沒有說完呢!在英 文惠,稱 husband and wife 有時可稱為 wedded couple,或 是 wedded pair. 在中文裏則稱為「夫婦」,或「夫妻」,或「一 對人兒 | 。稱情投意合, 华臥不離的夫婦則稱為「雙宿雙飛 | ○ 在俗語裏,稱「夫婦」又稱為「兩口兒」。這「兩口兒」—個名詞 在下流計會的文盲們口裏說久了,常常就訟變了。由「兩口兒」 能訟變成「兩口人」、由「兩口人」又能訟變成「兩個人」。有一次 我到某個鄉下去開一個短期的佈道會,有一個老頭兒每天扶着 一個瞎眼婆子來聽我講道,眞是風雨無阻,從不間斷。有一次 我問那老頭兒那瞎眼婆子算他什麼人,他對我說:「我們兩個 是兩個人。」我當時聽了那老頭兒的話。與是莫名其妙,一點 不明白他說的是什麼意思。我心裏想:「這老頭兒說話也眞可 笑,你們兩個不是兩個人,難道還能是一個人嗎?「但我當時 一想到這裏。就忽然覺悟過來。我心裏覺得:他所謂的「兩個 人」,一定就是「一個人」的意思。換句話說,他倆一定是夫婦 。後來我向別人一打聽,才知道他倆果然是夫婦。普通一般中 國人對於「夫婦」的觀念都認為是「二人合而為一」的,所以被 人家結婚時總都寫「百年好合」一類的字樣,因此中國的夫婦也差不多都能「白首偕老」。在我們西方,稱自己的老婆有時稱為 my better half,直譯為中國文就是:「我那半個更好的」。 這話在言外大有認為夫婦是可分為兩半的意思,所以也難怪我們美國聯婚的事件太多了!』

康庇禮講到這裏,,本來不預備再講下去的了,但是林祖義 和莫惠英都聽出興趣來,一齊要求他再講下去。康庇禮說:

『我知道你們年青人一定都是喜歡聽這一類話的,既是這 樣,我就爽性再講一點給你們聽罷。「夫婦」我們已經講過了, 現在我們再來講「愛人」。關於「愛人」這類意思的字,在英文裏 有 sweetheart, darling, love, lover, beloved 等等。 sweet 是「甜蜜」的意思, heart 是「心」, 兩個合起來是「甜蜜底心」, 那當然是「愛人」了。 darling 這個字可以把它拆開來看。前面 的 dar—是由 dear 轉變來的,意思是「親愛底」。後面的—ling 是一個接尾語(suffix).有「小東西」,或「小人兒」的意思。「親 愛底小人兒 ,那當然也是「愛人」了。 love 這個字當動詞用 的時候是「愛」;當名詞用的時候大概又可分成兩個意思,一個 是「愛情」,還有一個就是「愛人」。 lover 和 beloved 這兩個字 雖然也都是[愛人]的意思,但內在的涵義很有區別,許多中國 學生都弄不清楚,我現在不妨提出來詳細說一說。 lover 這個 字是由動詞 love 變出來的。凡動詞的後面加上了 r, 或 er, 或 or,或 ar,都是表示「動作者」或「行為者」的意思。譬如 speak 是「說話」, speaker 就是「說話的人」。 teach 是「教書」, teacher 就是「教書的人」。 love 的意思是「愛慕」,所以 lover 的意思也就是「愛慕的人」。由此可知, lover 的根本涵義是 「愛慕別人的人」的意思。在普通戀愛的情形下,多半是男的先 追女的,所以 lover 字這個也多半是指男子而言。當然,在

有的時候就是加在女子頭上也是很對的。譬如二人要是同時互 相愛慕時,在英文裏就說他們是 a couple of lovers. 至於 beloved 這個字,它的語根 (root) 也是動詞 love..be—是個接 頭語 (prefix), 有 completely (全然), thoroughly (澈底) 的 意思。loved 是 past participle, 有被動的意思。所以 beloved 的根本涵義是「被人愛的人」的意思。我們現在明白了 lover 和 beloved 的區別以後,再來看下面這兩句話,就可以知道這兩 句話的內在涵義很不相同了。"(1) She is my lover. (2) She is my beloved. 這兩句話若譯成中文,都是:「她是我的愛人」 。但在第一句話裏,言外之意是「她愛我」,在第二句話裏,言 外之意是[我愛她],這二者的區別,大得很哪!有一次我在一 個學生的作文裏發現了他把所有應當用 beloved 的地方,都用 上了 lover. 我才知道你們中國學生對於這兩個字的意義並沒 有澈底了解。你們翻開英漢字典,看下面的註解都是「愛人」, 就以為兩個字的意思是完全一樣了,其實那裏知道是這樣地大 不相同呢!以後你們每學得一個生字,都應當注意去研究那個 字的語根 (root) 和語源 (etymology), 然後對於那個字的意 義就可以有澈底的了解了。』 康庇禮說到這裏就住了口,不再 往下說。林祖義聽得出神,不由得又向康庇禮道:

『康先生,我們聽了你的話,實在得益不少,真是「與先生一席談,勝讀十年書」了。我們實在還想繼續聽下去,你能再多講一點給我們聽聽嗎?』

『我所要講的話都已經講完,實在也沒有什麼可講的了』 ,康庇禮說。『不過 darling 那個字,有時父母呼喚自己親愛 的兒女,也可以用它。 還有夫婦間互相呼喚 ,也可以呼 my darling, my dear, 不過也有直接呼對方的名字的。就是在中 國,現在一般新式的夫婦,也多半直接呼喚對方的名字。舊式 的中國婦女,對面呼自己的丈夫,稱「你」;對第三人說到自己的丈夫則稱「他」。我記得曾經聽人說過一次笑話,說是有一位舊式的中國婦人,專喜歡在別人面前誇讚自己的丈夫,一遇見人就是:他這樣,他那樣,他、他、他個不休。別人取笑她,就問她道:「你老是說他、他、他到底是誰呀?」那婦人聽罷紅起臉來,就不再說下去了。還有一般年青的夫婦們,當互相熱愛着的時候,彼此呼喚,常好「心兒」,「肝兒」地亂叫着。但那不過是一種閨房密語,是不足為外人道也的了。』康庇禮說罷,自己哈哈大笑起來。林祖義聽得高興,也笑得嘴兒合不上。惟有莫惠英覺得害羞,想笑不敢笑。正在這時, Mrs. Campbell 手捧着洋燈,從屋裏走出來,向大家說:

『現在晚飯已經預備好,就請大家一齊在這裏用便飯能。』 莫惠英聽了這話好像忽然想起了一件什麼事情似地,突然 站起來,說道:

『啊喲!天已經黑了!我還要趕快囘去呢!街上盡是兵, 太遲了不好行走。』

林祖義站起來伸頭向窗外一看,但見那窗外的幾樣盆景, 已經在昏暗中顯得模糊起來了。於是林祖義也向康庇禮夫婦告 僻,要趕早囘家去。康庇禮夫婦看他們歸心很切,於是也就不 再苦留。康庇禮對林祖懿說:

『現在天已黑了;街上兵很多,莫小姐單身有點害怕,你 可以陪她多走一段路,把她送到家裏。』

林祖義聽了連聲答應着,就和莫惠英—同走出了康庇禮的 家。莫惠英向林祖義說:

『林先生,真對不起呀!勞你多走許多路。』 『那裏的話呢,這是我應當做的事呀!』林祖義說。 由康庇禮的家到莫惠英的家裏去,中途須經過學校。莫惠 英說:

『學校的前門一帶,兵隊很多,我們不如繞道學校的後門 走器。』

他倆默默地在路上走着,彼此保持個相當的距離。迎面走來幾個兵,獳笑着拚命地對他們看。莫惠英低着頭放快了脚步走,林祖義在後面緊緊跟隨。他們走近學校的後門,聽見由後層房屋的窗戶裏傳出了兵士們吹笛子和唱歌的聲音。他們走近窗戶時,兵士們停止了吹唱,都擁到窗口來看他們。那個手裏拿着笛子的兵士高聲叫道:

『男學生女學生,男女學生生男女。』他才叫完,後面又 有一個兵士接着叫道:

『東當舗,西當舗,東西當舗當東西。』他叫完後屋裏的 兵士們一齊哈哈大笑。林祖義也不知是好氣還是好笑,只得不 踩不理,低頭默默地走。莫惠英的脚步越走越快,林祖義幾乎 有點跟不上了。

林淵義將莫惠英送到家門口,莫惠英向他說:

『林先生,叫你走了這許多冤枉路,真使我不過意呀。請你進來休息一會,就在舍間用晚飯罷。』

『天已經很晚,我也要趕早回家呢。你不用客氣,我們下 次再見罷。』林祖義說罷就走。

恰巧這時莫惠英的父親莫牧師從屋裏走出來,莫惠英告訴 她父親一切經過,莫牧師—把拉住林祖義說:

『你是男子,晚上遲一點囘家有什麼關係呢?你用不着客 氣,你的父親和我都是熟人哩!』

莫枚師將林祖義拉進家裏去,莫師母已經將晚飯拿出來。 林祖義看孫重美也在那裏,正在幫助莫師母拿菜拿飯,一切非 常熟習,好像她就是長期住在莫惠英家裏似的。那晚上他們吃 的是稀飯麵條,林祖義覺得口味很好。一桌共園了六個人,除 莫牧師夫婦、莫惠英、孫重美林祖義外還有莫牧師的小兒子莫 愛德。他們一邊吃着飯,一邊談論在學校裏讀書的種種事情。 莫牧師問林祖義在啓慧中學裏讀了這些日子英文,可有什麼感 想,林和義說:

『我學文法的時候但覺得頭緒紛繁,有點鬧不清楚。念讀本的時候,但覺得生字太多,總是記不住。每次拿起英文書來,如果讀得時間太久了,就會煩厭起來,再也讀不下去了。』

『英文文法這個東西不是作一下子就可以完全記住的,』 莫牧師對林祖義說。『我覺得耍想攻克文法這一道難闊,應當 從三條不同的道路同時進攻。第一,交法應當時常從頭至尾, 反覆温習。這裏面又可分為兩層:(甲)將已經讀過的文法書時 常拿過來温習和觀壓;(乙)要多讀幾種不同的交法書。第二; 應當拿讀本來驗證文法。這就是說,當讀書的時候,應當時時 刻刻留心觀察英文語句的構造,並且用已經學過的文法來分析 剖解文句中的詞和語。遇到有分析不出來的時候,然後再把文 法書拿出來查看,對照,和研究。第三,應當用作文來練習文 法。要想熟習文法,須時常運用文法。對於文法僅僅是「知道」 或「明白」,那是不夠的。必須能夠「運用」文法,能「指揮」文法 , 然後才能說得上是學會了文法。作文實在是練習文法的最好 手段,凡想對英文作高深造就的都不能不時常練習作文。有一 **種最簡便最實用的英文作文,那就是作英文日記。作英文日記** 不但可以把每天所做的事情和所生的感想記下來,而且還可以 把當天所學的文法和牛字都拿來練習和運用。若將文法和生字 時常加以練習和運用,自然就容易記住了。因此我叫惠英和重 美每天晚上都作英文日記,她們已經作了有一年多,從來沒有 間断・山

『莫小姐每天都作英文日記嗎?那太好了!不知道可能讓我拜讀拜讀?』林祖義說。但是莫惠英聽了他的話只願低頭吃飯,並不囘答。林祖義頓時覺悟到自己說錯了話。女司學的日記,那裏可以要來看呢?他很懊悔自己說話不小心。於是他又設法將作日記的話臉開不談,轉臉向莫牧師問道:

『關於學習文法—層,已經蒙老伯指教過了。還有關於記憶生字—事,不知還有什麼好辦法沒有?』

『你最好預備—本小小的生字簿, 隨身配帶, 學得了什麽 生字,馬上就記到裏面去。這個生字簿是留作隨時隨地翻開來 照看的。無論是在走路的時候也好,吃飯的時候也好,上廁所 的時候也好,總而言之,只要得一點閒空,就可以把這個小牛 字簿從懷中掏出來,翻開觀看溫習。還有一件事,也是記憶生 字的好辦法,可就不知道你能否做得到了。你最好把你的環境 造成一個英文的環境。譬如你的臥室,你的書齋,是你每天停 留最久的地方。凡是這些地方的牆上、床上、桌上、用具上, 你不妨都寫了英文生字的紙條兒貼上。這樣你每天坐臥其間, 只要一張目,一走動,就可以隨時隨地溫習你所學過的生字。 誓的字記熟了,然後再換上新字條兒。惠英和重美就實行這辦 法,等吃罷飯我好帶你到她們房間專去看看,以便你回家後照 樣地模仿。強記的辦法,不外就是讓對象在腦子裏反覆映現。 反覆的次數多了,時間久了,自然就記住了。還有一件事情, 不僅與強記生字有關,而且也是學習英文的最後目標。凡是學 習英文的人,都應當自己訓練自己,使自己能夠很快地直接用 英文去發表思想,中間不要經過由中文來翻譯那個階段。譬如 心裏想耍發表那一種思想,應當馬上就能夠用英文把那種思想 立刻發表出來,不要先把那種思想發表爲中文,然後再將那中 文譯為英文。要想達到這個目的,當然須要長期的修養;不過

初步的訓練如果得法,進步是很快的。你記住以後你每看見一 個物件,就想這個物件的英文名稱是什麽;每看見一個東西, 就想這個東西應當用什麼英文字來形容;每遇見一棒事情,就 想這椿事情用英文應當怎樣說。凡是用英文發表不出來的思想 , 你就得查漢英字典, 或問先生, 或和同學們討論。這樣訓練 長久了,你自然就慢慢會直接用英文來發表思想了。譬如說, 你現在身上所穿的這件長衫,你可知道在英文裏叫做什麼?』 莫牧師指着林祖義身上所穿的長衫問林祖義說。

『西洋人不穿中國這樣的長衫,恐怕在英文裏沒有這個字 罷。』林淵義說。

『外國雖沒有這樣中國式的長衫, 但是長大寬鬆的衣服是 有的。譬如法官和大學學員所穿的長制服都叫做 gown, 女子 結婚時所穿的長禮服也叫做 wedding gown. 像中國這樣的長 衫,若用英文說起來,當然也可以叫做 gown.』莫枚師說到這 裏叫做什麽?』

『牛肉叫做 beef、我是知道的;豬肉的英文名詞我還沒有 學過呢。』林祖義說。

『外國人喜歡吃牛肉,所以多半的數科書上都有 beef 這 個字。但是中國人喜歡吃的豬肉,普通的教科書上反而沒有了 。由此可見中國現在一般通用的教科書,並不能與正適合中國 人的需要。豬肉在英文中叫做 pork, 你現在且把它好好記住, 以便將來能隨時運用它。』莫牧師說到這裏又指了桌上的稀飯 和麵條問林祖義道:『像稀飯和麵條這一類的食品,在西洋也 都是有的。你可知道在英文裏叫做什麼?』

林祖義搖搖頭表示不知道。

『稀飯叫做 gruel, 麵條叫做 noodles.』 莫牧師說完了稍

停一會,又向林祖義道:『譬如你在我家吃飯,我向你說:「請 隨便用菜,不要客氣!」這句話若改成英文,應當怎麼說?』 林祖義聽了又搖搖頭,表示不會說。

『這句話若用英文說就是: help yourself, please.』 莫 牧師告訴林祖義說。『你以後若常照這樣隨時隨地試用英文來 發表自己的思想,練習久了,對於英文就可以運用自如了。不 但你已經學過的生字容易記住不忘,就是你平常素不知道的許 多詞藻和語彙都可以逐漸增加擴大起來,使你在不知不覺之中 ,對於英文的造詣日深一日。』

莫牧師說到這裏時飯已吃罷,他於是拿起洋燈來,領導了 林祖義去參觀莫惠英的房間。林祖義一進了那房門,就覺得一 陣幽香撲鼻,幾乎使他醉了起來。他走近到窗前的桌邊,看桌 上原來是養了一株花。那花養在一個水盂裏,形狀有點像蘭草 。這時莫惠英也走到桌前來,林祖義就問莫惠英道:

『這花好香呀!這叫做什麼花呢?』

『這是百合花,英文名子叫 water lily, 你不知道嗎?』 莫惠英說。

林祖義低頭看那水盂旁邊,倚着一個小小的木牌,木牌上寫了 to paint the lily 幾個字。林祖義拿起木牌來問莫惠英道:

『這句英文是什麼意思呢? paint 不是塗繪,畫畫的意思嗎?在百合花上繪書,那是什麼意思呢?』

『這是一句英文成語,和中國的成語[錦上添花]是一樣的意思。』莫惠英說。『你想,百合花已經是很美麗的了,還要 在百合花的花瓣上書圖書,那不是上[錦上添花|嗎?』

林祖義抬頭向四周一看,但見滿牆貼的都是紙片,紙片上 寫的都是英文字。靠書桌附近的壁上貼了一張較大的紙,林祖 義看那張紙上所寫的字正都是上次才學過的那課書 Bruce and the Spider 裏面的。林祖義看那紙上寫的有:had need to be brave and wise; wild and rude; at war with; lead an army; to drive him out of the land; battle after battle; were beaten and driven into flight; to hide oneself; the ratter of rain; tired and sick at heart; ready to give up all hope; toiled slowly and with great care; fell short; lose hope with; messages of cheer; disheartened people; I heard it said; by the name of; 林祖義再看那書桌四邊上, 幾張椅子和凳子上,還有那靠後牆的一張床上,也都是貼滿了紙片。林祖義向莫牧師說道:

『怪不得莫小姐的英文那樣好,她每天住在這樣一個英文 環境中,自然會不知不覺地把英文字都記住了。我的英文實在 太差,在班上常常被同學們竊笑。從今後,我得模仿模仿莫小 姐這一切學習英文的辦法了。作英文日記,房間裏貼英文字條 ,這兩件事我從明天起就實行。不過我作的英文是錯誤百出的 ,我想以後把每天所作的日記都拿來請莫小姐改正,不知道莫 小姐肯費心給我改嗎?』林祖義一邊說着,一邊用眼去看莫惠 英。但是莫惠英低着頭,一言也不發。林祖義覺得很沒趣。他 又懊悔自己說错了話:自己的日記,那裏可以拿來給女同學看 呢?他自知他的話是說得過於親密了。這時他無意間向那床上 一看,但見在床的一頭一並排放着兩個枕頭,每個枕頭上都用 紅絨線織了 pillow 一個大字。林祖義一看就猜出,那 pillow 一定就是『枕頭』的意思。不過在一個枕頭上, pillow 的下 方是用綠絨線樹成的一個 Mu 字,在另外的一個枕頭上,却 是鄉的一個 Sun 字。林祖義心裏想,莫惠英和孫重美分明是 同在一張牀上睡覺的 2 她倆的感情何以會這樣好呢?他想着 >

不由覺得心頭悶悶。正在這時,他忽然聽得窗外一聲鳥叫。他 忙走到窗前,看窗外懸掛着一個籠子,籠子裏養着的原來是一 隻畫眉。莫牧師走來打開窗戶,把鳥籠拿進屋內。林祖義看那 籠子上標着一個橫木牌,上面寫着 thrush 一個英文字。林祖 義問莫牧師道:

『這 thrush 就是「畫眉鳥」的意思嗎?』

『是呀!』莫牧師說,『此外還有兩句諺語,你懂不懂?』莫牧師說着,就將鳥籠兒轉過來,將另外一個木牌轉到林祖義的眼前。林祖義看那木牌上寫的是: A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush. 林祖義說:

『「手裏的一隻鳥,抵得上叢林裏的兩隻鳥」。這意思好像是說:「現有的靠得住的東西,比渺茫靠不住的東西勝得多。」是不是這個意思呢?』

『是呀!正是這個意思。』莫牧師說。『中國也有一句諺語說:「遠親不如近鄰」,倒很和這個意思相近似呢!』莫牧師說着,又轉動鳥籠,將另外—個木牌轉到林祖義的眼前。林祖義看那木牌上寫的是: to kill two birds with one stone.

『「以一石殺兩鳥」,這倒有點「一舉兩得」的意思哪!』 林祖義說。

『正是這個意思呀!』莫牧師說。『不過還有一句中國診 語,是和這個英文諺語十分切合的,你能想得出來嗎?』

林祖義想了一會沒有想出來。莫牧師說:

『「一箭雙鵙」不是和這句英文諺語正相切合嗎?』

他們談話到這裏,林祖義看天已不早,就向莫牧師告辟要 同家。莫牧師送林祖義走到庭院的時候,林祖義的脚絆了地上 的一根根子。林祖義將那棍子拾起一看,但見那棍子上也刻着 一行英文字: spare the rod and spoil the child. 林祖義問

- 莫師這是什麼意思, 莫敬師說:

『這話直譯出來,就是:「愛惜了棍子,慣壞了孩子」。 這和中國的俗語「棒頭出孝子」正是一樣呀!我的小兒子愛德 ,性情頑皮 ,最不聽大人的話 。 這棍子是我有時用來責打他 的。』

林祖義解別了莫牧師,就向自己的家裏走去。他走出了大街,聽得由啓慧中學傳來一陣陣悠揚的笛晉。他想:這又是那位高唱『男女學生生男女』的兵士在那裏吹笛子了。這時夜氣清幽,他覺得精神非常爽快。已經快走到家了,他忽然想起莫惠英和孫重美那樣日夜形影不離的情形,於是心頭又不由得納悶起來。他說不出自己是什麼一種心情,但覺得滿腹都是氣憤和不平。在這種氣憤和不平的情緒中,他終於走進了自己的家。

VI. 水水的風波

林祖義一連作了幾天的英文日記,自己覺得辭不達意的地方很多。他心裏很想把日記拿去給莫惠英看,順便請她改正,但是他又怕莫惠英不願意看他的日記,不願意替他改。他把這事放在心裏考慮了华天,最後他終於下了决心。他想:『我又不是要她的日記看,我把我的日記拿去給她看,她又何至於嚴加拒絕呢?』他拿定了主意後,遂帶了自己的日記,走到莫惠英家裏去。這時莫牧師不在家,孫重美也不在家,莫惠英自己一個人正在屋裏看書。林祖義問莫惠英道:

『孫重美小姐不在嗎?她到那裏去了?』

『她到她自己家裏去了。她白日裏常常囘自己家裏去的呀!』 莫惠英說。

『孫小姐自己有家,她為什麼長期住在你這裏呢?』林祖 義又問。

『我因為一個人讀書,很感得寂寞,所以邀她來和我住在 一地,彼此可以互相研究,互相勉勵。』莫惠英說。

『你有這樣—個好朋友,眞值得羨慕喲!我眞氣悶,我為 什麽沒有這樣—個好朋友呢?』

『你們男同學不是也很多嗎?』

『男同學雖多,但是知心的朋友—個也沒有!』林這義感 槪無限地說。

但是莫惠英聽了他的話,低下頭去,不再囘答他。林祖義 終於把自己的日記簿拿出來說道:

『我勉強作了幾天的英文日記,但是我覺得處處辭不達意,想說的話總是說不出來。我自己知道我已經作成的這幾篇裏 面錯誤一定是很多的,所以我特意傘來給莫小姐看看,請莫小 姐替我改正。』林祖義說着,就在莫惠英書桌對面的椅子上坐 下來。

『你的日記我可以看嗎?』莫惠英問林祖義的時候,自己 還是低着頭並不學眼看林祖義的臉。

『那有什麼不可以呢?我的東西你都可以看。』林祖義說 着,就將手裏的一本日記簿遞到莫惠英面前去。

莫惠英看那日記簿的封面上寫了很大的一個 Dairy 不由 得噗嗤一磬笑了起來。她笑時用手掩住口說道:

『你寫錯了呀!日記是 diary, 不是 dairy. dairy 是牛奶廠嘛!中間有兩個字母是互相顚倒的。』

林祖義連聲『啊、啊、』地答應,紅着臉,拿起筆來,將 Dairy 劃去,在下面寫了一個 Diary. 莫惠英於是翻開日記簿 ,看那第一篇日記原來是這樣寫的:

"March 14th. Wednesday. Good weather and not cold not hot. I rose my body very early on seven o'clock. The sunshine shone light to my window. I out room make exercises on court. Eating breakfast later, I reviewed my English and reading lessons loud. Then Mr. Liu He told me the soldiers will go not long and will open school from the next week. I hear it the time I very glad. Afternoon father told me my big brother and Miss Wang to engage and the two people will soon marry. He called me to present a letter to Mr. Chang Mr. Chang is the match-maker. At night I study English Then I sudden think the song. Catherine grammer. teach me the song. Catherine was a daughter of Compbell. I very liked the song. I write the song at a paper. I readed the song one time and one time all several times. Then after I sleeped. I hope I study many songs again."

惠英看完了笑着說:

『這裏面文法上的錯誤倒眞是很多呢!』

『就請你替我改正罷,我眞威謝你哪!』林祖義怨求似地 說。

『譬如起首的 good weather, 你的意思是說天氣好。但是英文中有 fair 一個字 , 就是說天氣好的意思 , 用不着說 The weather is good 一類的話。還有那下面 not cold not hot, 你的意思是說「不冷不熱」,但是這樣的說法完全是中國話,那裏是英文呢?英文裏有 mild 一個字,就是「不冷不熱」的意思。所以我想把你的 good weather and not cold not hot 改成 fair and mild. 這不是簡單明瞭嗎?』

林祖義聽說趕快拿過一張紙來,把莫惠英所改正過來的照 樣抄了下去。莫惠英等他抄完又繼續說:

『I rose my body, 你的意思是說「我起身」。但 rose 是 個 intransitive verb, 不能有 object. 而且 rose —個字就是 「起身」的意思,下面再加上 body 反而不通了。所以只應當 說 I rose. on seven o'clock 是不對的,應當說 at seven o'clock. 對於時間 (time), 都用 at. 這些 preposition 全都有習慣的用法,沒有什麼理由可譯。你對於這些 preposition 的用法全都得下硬工夫死記。 o'clock 是可以省略的。所以第二句改成 I rose early at seven 就行了。第三句裏 sunshine 改成 sun 比較好,因為 sun 有時也知是「日光」的意思。你說 light 是要說「明亮」,的意思,但 light 是 adjective, 這 測地方應當用 adverb, 所以改用 brightly 這個字比較合宜。

後面的 to my window 換成 at my window 也要好得多。 所以這第三句應當這樣說: The sun shone in brightly at my window. 譯成中文就是:太陽明亮亮地射進我的窗戶來。 下面的 I out room, 你的意思是要說:「我出了屋子」,但 英文惠沒有動詞,不能成一句話,應當說 I got out of the room. 後面的 make exercises, 你的意思是說「做體操」,但 「做體操」的成語是 take exercises, 不能說 make exercises. 你前面的動詞都用的是 past tense, 這時也得用 past tense. 前後動詞的時制 (tense) 要一致 , 這在文法上叫做 agreement 所以這裏應當說 took exercises. 你所做的體操大概總是柔軟 體操;不是激烈性的體操吧;所以這裏說 light exercises 比 較好。 on court 不對,應當說 in the court. on 是「在上 面」的意思, in 是「在裏面」的意思。 court 是四面有圍牆 的庭院,當然應該說「在裏面」。這種 preposition 的用法雖 說都是習慣用法,但有時也是有理性的。「在院子裏做柔軟體 操」,應當說: took light exercises in the court. 這半句話 和前面那半句話連接起來的時候,中間應當加個 and. 所以這 整個的句子是: I got out of the room and took light exercises in the court.』 莫惠英說到這裏看林祖義寫得沒有她說得快; 於是稍停了一停,然後再說下去:

『after breakfast 就是「吃罷早飯」的意思,不能說 eating breakfast later. 如果說 eating breakfast later, 那就變成:「等一會兒再吃早飯了。」下面的應當是 I reviewed my English lessons and read them loudly. 中間的那個 and 是連接 reviewed 和 read 兩個動詞的。不能用 reading, 因為 reading 是 present participle, 不是動詞,不能和 reviewed 連接在一塊。 and 一定要連接兩個同等的字。 them 這個代名詞代替了

lessons, 因為要避免前後重覆,音調不協。 loud 是 adjective, loudly 是 adverb, 這個地方應當用 adverb, 因為它是形容動 詞 read 的 o Then Mr. Liu come 要改成 Then Mr. Liu came, 因為動詞要前後一致,都要用 past tense, 下面的應當 是: He told me that the soldiers would go away soon and the school would begin again next week. That 是 conjunction, 將前面的 he told me 那個 clause 和後面的 the soldiers would go 那個 clause 連接在一起。不過 that 和 and 不同。 and 是 co-ordinative conjunction, 連接兩個同等的部份; that 是 subordinative conjunction, 連接兩個不同等的部份。 that 前面的 he told me 是 independent clause, that 後面的叫做 dependent clause. will 應當改成 past tense 的 would, 以求前 後 tense 的一致。 and will open school........裏面沒有 subject, 所以應當改為 the school would begin..........這裏面 school 是 subject, would begin 是動詞。 next week 已經是 adverbial phrase 了,用不着再加上 from. 下面的 I hear it 應當是 I heard of it. hear 是「聽」,hear of 是「聽到」,這個地方應當 用「聽到」。 the time 放在那個地方在文法上實在是講不通。 你的意思是:「我聽到那消息的時候」。這在英文裏應當說: when I heard of it. when 在文法上叫 relative adverb, 是將 句子的前後關係連繫起來的。 I very glad 照中文講雖是「我 很喜歡」,但照英文講裏面沒有動詞,不能成句,所以應當說 I was very glad. 這整個的句子就是: when I heard of it I was very glad.』莫惠英說到這裏又等林祖義把所改的全部抄 完了以後,才又繼續說下去:

『aftenoon 是名詞,孤單單放在句裏面在文法上譯不通, 應當將它變成一個 adverbial phrase, 說 in the afternoon.

「大哥 | 不能說 big brother, 要說 elder brother. 「與……訂 婚!應當是 be engaged to.....marry 是個 transitive verb, 要有個 object; 如若不然,就要把它用成 passive voice. 所以 這整個的一句話應當這樣說:In the afternoon father told me that my elder brother was to be engaged to Miss Wang. and the two would be married soon. 在這句話裏有三個 clause, that 前面的是一個 independent clause, that 後面的 是兩個 dependent clauses. 兩個 dependent clauses 的中間有 一個 and 把它們連接起來。 the two 就是兩個人的意思,用 不着再加上 people 那個字了。下面的兩句如果合併成一句; 文氣更能顯得通順簡潔: He asked me to send a letter to Mr. Chang, the matchmaker. called 是「叫喚」 , asked 才 是「使喚」。「送信」是 send a letter, 不是 present a letter. the match-maker 在這個地方的用法在文法上叫做 appositive (同位語),因為它和 Mr. Chang 是有同樣地位的。下面一句 裏的 study 應當改成 past tense. 那就是: At night I studied English grammar. 記住 grammar 最後的兩個字母是 ar, 不是 er. 有許多人常常會弄錯。下面的三句應當合倂成一句, 文氣 才能通順簡潔。那就是: Then I suddenly thought of the song I learned from Catherine. the daughter of Mr. Campbell. 在 song 的後面, I 的前面,本來應當有個 relative pronoun, 像是 which 或是 that 但是被省略去了。 thought 是「想」,thought of 是「想到」,在這個地方應當用 thought of. sudden 是 adjective, 用得不對,應當用 adverb, 那就是 suddenly. the daughter of Mr. Campbell 是 Catherine 的 appositive. 『我很喜歡那歌』,應當說: I liked the song very much, 不能說 I very liked the song. 為避免前後的 song

這個字用得太多,聲音重覆了不好聽,不妨用代名詞來替它。下面的三句也應當合併為一句。 at a paper 要改為 on a piece of paper. read 這個字的 past tense 讀音雖變,拚法未改,還是 read, 並不是 readed. sleep 的 past tense 是 slept, 並不是 sleeped. 所以這句英文應當是: I wrote it down on a piece of paper and read it again and again for several times before I went to bed. went to bed 就是 slept 的意思。最後,你是想說:「我希望我能再多學點歌兒」。這在英文裏應當說: I hoped I could learn more songs. 對於 song 只能說 learn,不能說 study, 因為 learn 是「學習」的意思, study 却是「研究」的意思了。』

林祖義將莫惠英所改正的抄完以後,先從頭細看一遍,然 後再和自己的比較對照着看一遍。那所改得的全篇日記是這樣 的:

'March 14th. Wednesday. Fair and mild. I rose early at seven. The sun shone in brightly at my window. I got out of the room and took light exercises in the court. After breakfast I reviewed my English lessons and read them loudly. Then Mr. Liu came. He told me that the soldiers would go away soon and the school would begin again next week. When I heard of it I was very glad. In the afternoon father told me that my elder brother was to be engaged to Miss Wang and the two would be married soon. He asked me to send a letter to Mr. Chang, the matchmaker. At night I studied English grammar. Then I suddenly thought of the song I learned from Catherine, the daughter of Mr. Campbell. I liked it very much. I wrote

it down on a piece of paper and read it again and again for several times before I went to bed. I hoped I could learn more songs'

莫惠英等林祖義看完了那篇日記就問他說:

『你喜歡詩歌嗎?』 "Do you like poetry?"

"Of course," 林祖義說, "I like to read poetry."

"Well, I'll show you another poem." 莫惠英說着,就從抽屜裏找出一本書來。

"What is the difference between poem and poetry?" 淋血紊說。

『Poetry 是詩歌的總稱, poem 是一首詩, a piece of poetry 的意思。』莫惠英一邊說着,一邊從那本書裏找出一張紙來,遞給林祖義說道:

『這首詩是有名的詩人 Christian G. Rossetti 作的,我. 喜歡它,因為它一則文字淺顯,無論誰都能看得懂,二則因為. 它音調也好,意思也有趣。不知道你覺得怎樣?』

林和義看那詩原來是:

The Wind

Who has seen the wind?

Neither I nor you;

But when the leaves hang trembling,

The wind is passing through.

Who has seen the wind?

Neither you nor I;

But when the trees bow down their heads,.

The wind is passing by.

『這首詩裏面一個生字也沒有,意思差不多全可以懂得,』 林祖義看罷了說,『那 trembling 不是發抖、戰慄的意思嗎?』

『正是這個意思翰』譬如說:The leaves tremble in the breeze. I tremble at the thought of war. His voice trembled with anger. Her hands trembled from excitement. I tremble for his safety. I tremble to think what might have happened. 在這裏所當注意的是隨在 tremble 後面的許多 preposition 像 in, at, with, for, 以及 infinitive 'to think'等等,每一個附加上去的字都有它固定的用法和特別的意思,你最好把這些句子都抄下去,得空就拿過來誦讀和揣摩,長久了,你自己也就會運用了。』

『逗有一首詩,也很好,不過比剛才那首稍難一點,你不 妨也把它抄了帶囘去念念。』莫惠英說着又拿出了另外一張紙 , 滅給林祖錢。林祖錢看那詩原來是:

A Spring Song

Spring is coming, spring is coming!

Birdies, build your nest,

Weave together straw and feather,

Doing each your best,

Spring is coming, spring is coming,

Flowers are coming, too:

Pansies, lilies, daffodillies,

Now are coming through.

Spring is coming, spring is coming,

All around is fair, Shimmer and quiver on the river, Joy is everywhere.

『birdies 是什麼意思呢?』林祖義問,『後面的那個 nest 是「巢」,birdies 好像應該是「鳥」的意思,不過為什麼不說 birds,却要說 birdies 呢?』

"birdie 的意思是「小鳥」,是一種寵愛的稱呼。 Weave together straw and feather 的意思是:將草和毛織在一塊。 weave 是「織」, straw 是「草」, feather 是「毛」。 do one's best 是一個成語,就是「盡力」,「努力」的意思。』

『第二節第三行裏的三種花名,我連一種也不知道。』林 涵義說。

『Pansy 是三色堇; daffodil 是水仙花; lily 上次你在我家時曾經看見過,我告訴你是百合花,你又忘了嗎?』

『第三節第三行,shimmer and quiver on the river 是什麼意思呢?』林祖義問。

『shimmer 是「閃光」, quiver 是「顫動」。微風吹在河面上,與起了小波浪,陽光照着,閃閃發亮。這是形容春天「風和景明」的樣子。所以說: Joy is everywhere, 到處都是快樂。』

林祖義將上面這首詩抄完了以後,"看莫惠英手裏拿着--本 很新的書,就問她道:

『這是什麽書呢?』

『這是我從康庇禮先生那裏借來的,叫做「伊索寓言」, Aesop's Fables. 這裏面的故事,寓意都很深呢!我看了真覺 得有意思。』莫惠英說。

林祖義把那害打開來一看,第一篇的題目寫着 The Wolf (72) • 英文因學 記•

and the Lamb. 林祖義問道:

『wolf 是「狼」的意思, lamb 是什麼意思呢?』

『lamb 是「小羊」這第一篇的題目就是:豟和小羊。你看下去呀,有意思得很呢!』

林祖義於是往下念道:

"One day a wolf and a lamb happened to come at the same time to drink from a brook that ran down the side of the mountain."

林祖義念完了第一句 , 就將不懂的地方提出來問莫惠英 道:

『at the same time 我是懂得的,意思是「同時」,這是很常用的 phrase. 不過那 happened to come 是什麼意思呢?既說 come, 又說 happened.』

『happened to 是「偶然」的意思,就是 by chance. happened to come 就是 came by chance.』 莫惠英說。

『那個 that 又是 subordinative conjunction 嗎?』

『不是。 that 在這個地方叫做 relative pronoun, 是代表 它前面那個 brook 的。將 that 換成 which 也是一樣。』

『遠有那 ran down the side of the mountain 我不明白。 the side of the mountain 是一個孤單單底名詞的 phrase, 前面好像應當有個 preposition. 在我的意思,這話似乎要這樣說才對: ran down from the side of the mountain. 不知道究竟是怎樣。』

『down 本身就是 preposition, 用不着再加 上 from 那個 前置詞了。』莫惠英說。

『down 也可以當 preposition 用嗎?』 林胆義很驚奇地 問 o

『怎麼不可以呢? down 當前置詞用的時候,它的意思就是: from a higher to a lower point of; downwards along. 譬如說: to go down a hill (下山); to sail down a river (順流航行)。』

莫惠英講解完畢,林祉義又繼續往下念道:

"The wolf wanted very much to eat the lamb, but meeting him, as he did, face to face, he thought he must find some excuse for doing so. So he began by trying topick a quarrel, and said angrily:

"How dare you come to my brook, and muddy thewater so that I cannot drink it? What do you mean?"

林祖義念罷又問莫惠英說:

『face to face 的意思是「面對面」,這我是懂得的;find: excuse 是「找籍口」,這也是我懂得的。只有 meeting 一個。字,是動詞加上了 ing, 可又不是 present progressive tense,那到底叫做什麼一種用法呢?』

『那叫 participle,』莫惠英說,『pcrticiple 又可以叫做 verbal adjective,因為它是由動詞變成的形容詞,所以它一字。 含有形容詞的性質,一半還保留着動詞的性質。 participle 可以分成兩種,一種是 "present participle, 一種是 past participle,像 meeting 就是 present participle, met 是 past participle; writing 是 present participle, written 是 past participle; speaking 是 present participle, spoken 是 past participle, 餘可以此類推。』

『to pick a quarrel 是「挑釁」的意思,』林祖義說。 『muddy 這個字當 adjective 用的時候是: dirty with mud; 當 verb 用的時候是: make muddy, become muddy. 這都是 我學過的。但是 trying 那個字我想不會再是 participle 了,因為前面有個前置詞 by 呢! 還有那句 How dare you come to my brook 裏面,同時用了 dare 和 come 兩個動詞,這是怎麼囘事呢?』

『trying 那個字果然不是 participle,』莫惠英說,『trying 用在這個地方,在文法上叫做 gerund,又叫做 verbal noùn. 它是由動詞轉變成的名詞,有名詞的性質,同時也有動詞的作用。 dare 那個字的用法本來是很麻煩的。像 have, do, need, dare 這些字,在文法上叫做 anomalous verbs. anomalous 是「不規則底」的意思。 這些字都有許多不規則底用法。 dare 這個字有時被用成 anomalous verb, 但有時也和普通動詞一樣地使用。譬如當 anomalous verb 用的時候可以說: Dare he go? I dare say it is wrong. She dare not do it. How dare you say that? I dare take this step. 但有時也可以和普通動詞同樣使用。譬如說: He dares to try anything. He did not dare to do it.』 莫惠英譯完後林祖義又繼續念下去道:

The lamb, very much alarmed, said gently: "I do not see how it can be that I have spoiled the water. You stand higher up the stream, and the water runs from you to me, not from me to you."

"Be that as it may," said the wolf. "you are a rascal all the same, for I have heard that last year you said bad things of me behind my back."

"Oh, dear Mr. Wolf," cried the poor lamb, 'that could not be, for a year ago I was not born."

Finding it of no use to argue any more, the wolf began

to snarl and show his eath. Coming closer to the lamb, he said, "You little wretch, if it was not you, it was your father, so it's all the same," and he pounced upon the poor lamb, and ate her up.

When people mean to do bad and cruel things, they can easily make excuses for it.

林汕義念完了以後說:

『這後面幾段裏的意思大概都可以懂得』。』

『那句 You said bad things of me behind my back 的意思就是「你在我背後說我壞話」。關於這同樣的意思還有另外兩種說法: You spoke ill of me behind my back. 或者說: You spoke wil of me behind my back. 還有那句 cried the poor lamb, poor 在這個地方是「可憐底」的意思,並不是「貧窮底」的意思。和 snarl 意思相近似的字還有 growl,都是「怒叫」,「咆哮」的意思。 wretch 這個字有兩個意思:—個是 a very unfortunate or miserable person,譬如說: the poor wretch (那可憐的東西)。還有一個意思是 a very bad person,譬如說: you little wretch (你這壞蛋) pounce upon 的意思是 jump suddenly and seize (驀然跳起來抓住),譬如說: The cat pounced upon the mouse."」莫惠英將全篇意思解釋完畢,又問林祖義道:

『你請了這個故事發生什麼感想?』

『我覺得這故事把我心中所有的威概都說出來了,』林祖 義說。『在我們中國,凡是社會上有勢力的人,如果想陷害他 的仇敵,往往就造出一種罪名來,加在他仇敵的身上。所以中 國的諺語說:「匹夫無罪,懷壁其罪。」又說:「欲加之罪,何 惠無辭」。誰知這許多諺語却和這篇故事的寓意相暗合呢!」 林祖義和莫惠英談話時,不住地注意看她嘴裏那顆不整齊 的牙齒,莫惠英被看得不好意思,不由得說:

『你不要老是看我的牙,我的牙生得不整齊,很難看喃! 『莫惠英說時用手掩住口,低頭微笑着。

『這是那裏的話呢!』林祖義連忙說,『我覺得你那顆不整齊的牙不但沒有減損你的美,反而增加了你的美,填是富有詩意!用英文的形容詞來說,就是所謂 poetic 呀!』

『你不要這樣護刺人!』莫惠英聽了林祖義的話有點生起 氣來。

『我並不是護刺你,我說的是眞心話呀!』林祖義看莫惠 英生了氣,不免慌了手脚。他很想詳細解釋他的心意,但是心 慌意亂,結果一句話也說不出來。他留心看看莫惠英的臉色, 但見莫惠英的臉色更加沉悶下來了。

就事實上講,林祖義所說的話也的確是他的真心話。他覺得莫惠英嘴裏那顆下陷的牙齒在其餘整齊的牙齒中間特別顯得 藝術。他甚至覺得:她全身上下最美的一點就是那顆不整齊的 牙齒。他很想將他這番心意全盤說給莫惠英聽,以求她的諒解 ,但是當他看見她那冷然的臉色時,他又沒有勇氣開口了。最 後,他只好用別的話來把這件事情撇開。他問莫惠英道:

『譬如說,「我的牙齒生得不整齊」,這句話在英文裏應當怎樣說?』

"I've got uneven teeth." 莫惠英笑着說。

『為什麼要說 have got 呢? got 不是「得到」的意思嗎?』林祖義問。

"have got 就是 have 的意思,並沒有「得到」的意思在: 裏面。這是俗語,習慣上說 have 時都加上一個 got."

『我記得我第一天到學校來上課的時候,就聽你說了許多

關於 have 的說法。什麼 I have no book. I have not a book. I have not got a book. 關於這些不同的用法,我到現在還鬧不清楚。』

『此外還有呢!譬如我們有時說: Have you a book? 有時又說: Do you have books to read? 還有時說: I have had that book 用意有了不同, 說法就要隨之改變。』

『誰知這樣常用的容易字倒是這樣複雜!』 林祖義感嘆着 說。

『英文就是這樣的情形呀!越是容易的字越難。像 have, get, take, set, 這些常用的字, 用法都複雜得很哪!』

『不過你的話也真費解! 怎麼又是越容易, 又是越難呢?』 林祖義懷疑地, 却有與趣地問。

『但事實上是如此呀!』莫惠英說。『我想,這其中的原因也許是這樣的:這些常用的字是大衆們時時刻刻放在口邊上說的,這人這樣說,那人那樣說,說法太多了,所以這些字就跑出文法規律的範圍以外去了。』莫惠英才說到這裏,自己忽然忍不住掩口笑了起來,連忙改正自己所說的話道:

『你看,我又說錯了!事實上並不是語言跑出了文法的範圍,乃是文法沒有把語言收納進去呀!天下是先有語言後有文法的,並不是先有文法後有語言的。文法是由語言中整理歸納成功的,語言並不是從文法上推論演繹出來的。這些常用的字所以有這許多不規則的用法,是因為這些字是時時刻刻在大衆的口邊上說的。這人這樣說,那人那樣說,說法太多了,所以文法家就沒法把它們收納進那一條固定的規律下面去了。英美人學英文所走的道路是歸納的道路:英文念多了,自然會悟出英文中的規律來。我們學英文所走的道路是演繹的道路:先要了解了別人已經整理歸納成功的規律,然後再按照道種規律去

莫惠英正在和林祖義談話,孫重美忽然囘來了。她一隻脚 **跨進門,仲頭看見他倆正在談話,馬上又退了出去。**

『你回來啦!怎麼不進來呀!』莫惠英向孫重美高聲叫着。 『唔!』孫重美在牙縫裏答應一聲,但是並不進來。

莫惠英和林祖義又談了一會,看孫重美還不進來,於是她 又高聲叫道:

『重美!你進來呀!』

『我在這外面有事啦!』孫重美不慌不忙地說。

莫惠英又和林祖義談—會,看孫重美還不進來,忍不住又 高聲叫道:

『重美』我叫你進來,你怎麼老是不進來?』

『你們在那裏研究功課,要我進去幹什麼?』孫重美說。

莫惠英這時再也忍耐不住,不由得就跑出去,質問孫重美 道:

『你今天是怎麼囘事,你又和誰在生氣呀?』

『和誰在生氣? 我並沒有生氣呀!』孫重美說着,只顧低 頭整理那株為景,並不抬頭。

這時林祖義也走了出來。他看事情有點越來越不對,而且 時候也不早了,於是他就向莫惠英告辭,自行回家而去。林祖 華去後莫惠英又向孫重美說:

『你說你沒有生氣,我三番五次叫你進屋去,你為什麼老 是不進去?』

『你和你的愛人在屋裏談話,要我進去幹什麼?』孫重美 說。

· 小 小 的 風 波。

『這是什麼話!你怎麼說他是我的愛人!』莫惠英聽了孫 重美的話急得亂跳起來。『男和女,彼此不能說話,一說話就 是愛人!這還談什麼男女社交公開呢?』莫惠英在氣憤之餘, 不由得把胸中所有的學說都吐露了出來。

『他要不是你的愛人,你們談話就會那樣親密了嗎?』孫 重美還是不肯讓步,逼得莫惠英只是飢跳。

她倆於是就這樣你一句我一句互相吵鬧,彼此不肯讓步, 最後莫惠英氣得哭了起來。不一會莫牧師來叫她們去吃晚飯。 她們也不去。莫惠英哭着向莫牧師說:

『爸爸你來評一評理。今天林祖義來問我功課,你想,客人來到我的家裏,我能說不招待人家嗎?我和林祖義在屋裏研究了一會功課,重美囘來看見了,就和我生氣吵鬧,硬說林祖義是我的愛人,爸爸,你看………』莫惠英說到這裏就嗚咽起來,再也說不下去。

『你不要和我這樣吵鬧,你討厭我,我就忍我自己家去。 』孫重美說着,也流下了眼淚,站起來就要走。莫牧師看見了 趕快上前把她拉住,說道:

『你們兩個人,一對都是孩子氣!一點小事,有什麼值得 這樣吵鬧的!飯都涼了,快去吃晚飯罷!』

但是那晚上她倆終於都沒有吃晚飯。她們哭鬧了一會,經 莫牧師勸解一番,彼此也就收住眼淚,不哭不鬧了。莫牧師向 她們說:

『明天學校開課,明早還得早點起身哩!現在時候已經不早,你們趕快安息吧!』 莫牧師說罷,就自己走了出去。

莫牧師走後,她們就上床就寢。但是她們彼此都默默然, 誰也不和誰說一句話。於是那晚上她倆就這樣默默然背對背睡 了一夜。

VII. 心不在書

學校開了課不久,就傳出了要換校長的風聲。因為這時中國政府要收回教育權,命令所有私立學校都得在教育廳立案,並須更換中國人當校長。賴爾慈得了這個消息,自己先行辭了職,由校董會方面公推教會上的名人陳華陸為校長。當這個新舊校長交替的時候,學校裏也是人心不安。當教員的無心教書,當學生的無心讀書。有的教員上課時只顧和學生們談論學校的行政問題,並不教授課本。學生們的與趣也都是集中在學校行政問題上,拿起課本來,反而都念不下去了。但是康庇禮却不是這樣。他教書的態度始終如一,無論遇到什麼事,都是安然如常,毫不慌亂的。這天他一上課就對學生們說:

『無論換離來當校長,英文都是一定要讀的。你們都各自安心讀書,不久我們還得舉行學期考試呢!英文文法當中,最複雜困難的一部分是動詞,你們準備考試的時候,對動詞要特別注意。我們今天且來講一講動詞裏面的 infinitive 和 tense 這兩個問題。』康庇禮說到這裏就拿起粉筆來,一方面口講,一方面把重要的地方都寫在黑板上。他講的是:

動詞前面加個 to 的 這種用法就叫做 infinitive. infinitive 的意思是「無定限的」意思,因為這種動詞的用法不受 number 和 person 的限制,所以有此名稱。像 to teach, to study, to write, 都是 infinitive.

infinitive 可以分成 active voice 和 passive voice 兩種。像 to teach, to be teaching, to have taught, to have been teaching 都是 active voice 式的 infinitive. 像 to be taught, to have been taught, 都是 passive voice 式的 infinitive.

不過在有些動詞的後面,用 infinitive 的時候,to 這個字

是省去不用的。譬如說: You hear me speak. I see you write. He will let me go. 這裏面的 speak, write, go, 都是 infintive, 但是前面都沒有用 to. 像在 hear, see, let 這類動 詞的後面, infinitive 都不用 to. 和 hear, see, let 這樣同類 的字還有 make, feel, need, dare, bid, watch, behold, know 等等。

infinitive 有時具有名詞的性質,譬如說: To study is necessary. You want to study. infinitive 有時也具有形容詞或疏狀詞的性質。譬如說: You have no books to study. English is hard to learn. 第一句裏的 to study 是形容 books 的。第二句裏的 to learn 是形容 hard 的。

關於動詞的 tense, 細分起來,種類也很多,我們現在暫且 舉幾個重要的例來看一看。譬如說 speak 這個動詞,可以有這 許多不同的 tense:

I speak (simple present)

I have spoken (perfect)

I spoke (simple past)

I had spoken (past perfect)

I shall speak (simple future)

I shall have spoken (future perfect)

I should speak (past future)

I should have spoken (past future perfect)

康庇禮在黑板上將這許多 tense 寫完了以後,又對學生們 說:

『我們現在再來念讀本,試從讀本上來驗證我們今天所學 過的文法。你們且看五十較事第四十六頁的那課,The Miller of The Dee." 林祖義抄寫得比較慢,黑板上關於 tense 的例句他還沒有 抄完,已經被康庇禮擦去,改寫上了 The Miller of the Dee 一個大題目了。林祖義於是向坐在他身邊的莫惠英說:

『莫小姐,那 tense 的例句我還沒有抄完呢,請你把你的 筆記爺子借給我看一看好不好?我看你是已經抄完了呢!』

莫惠英聽了並不囘答,並且把頭更外轉了過去,背向着他,好像同沒有聽見他的話是一樣。這事對於林祖義眞是很大的一個刺激。悔恨和羞愧的心交織起來,頓時使他安坐不得,那裏還能靜聽康庇禮講書呢?他覺得那天他到莫惠英家裏去請她改日記,莫惠英對於他的態度本來是很好的。但是自從學校開課以後,他就看出來莫惠英對於他的態度有點改變了。有時他用眼去看莫惠英時,莫惠英總是轉過臉去避免他的目光。有時他走近莫惠英身邊,想和她說話,但是莫惠英總要設法躲開他,不和他接近。最初他還認為這大概是女子害羞的常態,心裏很能愿諒她。但是今天在課室裏的這次事件,實在太使他的面子過不去了。他心裏想:這被旁邊別的同學看見了,多麼難為情啲!女子的心眼兒也眞毒辣,怪不得俗語說『最毒婦人心』呢!

這時康庇禮已經開始念那課書了:

The Miller Of The Dee

Once upon a time there lived on the banks of the River Dee a miller, who was the happiest man in England. He was always busy from morning till night, and he was always singing as merrily as any lark. He was so cheerful that he made everybody else cheerful; and people all over the land liked to talk about his pleasant ways. At last the king

heard about him.

"I will go down and talk with this wonderful miller," he said. "Perhaps he can tell me how to be happy."

康庇禮念完了前二段先解釋襄面的生字說:『mill 是磨坊 , miller 是 one who owns or works a mill. banks 是河岸。 merrily 就是 happily. lark 是百靈鳥。 cheerful 是 happy and contented, bright, pleasant.』康庇禮將生字解釋完畢後 就即學生們說:

『你們看這兩段裏有幾個 infinitive?』

『and people all over the land liked to talk about his pleasant ways 裏面的 to talk 是 infinitive. 還有 to be happy 裏面的 to be 也是 infinitive.』—個學生說。

『你說得對了!』康庇禮稱證他。『我再來補充一點:那 I will go down and talk with this wonderful miller 裏面,go 和 talk 是因為在助動詞 will 的後面,所以把 to 都省去了。其實這兩個也可以算 infinitive. 還有那 Perhaps he can tell me how to be happy 裏面, can 是 auxiliary verb (助動詞),在 can 後面的 tell 也是 infinitive, 不過 to 是省去了。』康 庇禮說完了 infinitive 又問學生們道:

『你們看這兩段裏面的動詞都是什麼 tense?』

"lived 是 past tense; was 是 past tense; was singing 島 past progressive tense; made 是 past tense. liked, heard 也都是 past tense." 又一個學生說。

『凡是敍述過去的事情,多半都是用 past tense." 康庇證 說能又繼續往下念道:

As soon as he stepped inside of the mill, he heard the miller singing:—

"I envy nobody—no, not I!—For I am as happy as I can be,
And nobody envies me."

"You are wrony, my friend," said the king. "You are wrong as wrong can be. I envy you; and I would gladly change places with you, if I could only be as light-hearted as you are."

The miller smiled, and bowed to the king.

"I am sure I could not think of changing places with you, sir," he said.

"Now tell me," said the king, "what makes you so cheerful and glad here in your dusty mill, while I, who am king, am sad and in trouble every day."

康庇禮念完了又問學生道:

『這裏面的 infinitive 你們都能找得出來嗎?』

『I would gladly change places with you, change 是個 infinitive without 'to'. If I could only be, be 也是沒有 'to' 的 infinitive. bowed to the king, 這個 'to' 是前置詞 'king 是名詞 '是 to 的 object, 這和 infinitive 沒有關係。後面的 I could not think of, think 也是沒有 to 的 infinitive.』劉恆育 說。

『你說的全對了!還有關於 tense 一方面呢?』康庇禮又問他。

『敍述文多半都是 past tense, 括號內引用的句子多半是 present tense. 引用句是將當時所談的話照原樣子記錄下來的。當談話的時候,所用的 tense 自然都是 present tense』劉恆育又說。

『對了!』康庇禮說。『我再來解釋幾個生字: stepped inside 是「走進」。 inside 是 adverb, 形容那動詞 stepped. inside 還可以當名詞用和形容詞用。 envy 是「妒忌」。 lighthearted 和 cheerful 是一樣的意思。 dust 是「塵埃」,是名詞; dusty 是形容詞,是 full of dust, covered with dust 的意思。』 康庇禮將生字解釋完畢又繼續念下面的道:

The miller smiled again, and said, "I do not know why you are sad, but I can easily tell why I am glad. I earn my own bread; I love my wife and my children; I love my friends, and they love me; and I owe not a penny to any man. Why should I not be happy? For here is the River Dee, and every day it turns my mill; and the mill grindsthe corn that feeds my wife, my babies, and me."

"Say no more," said the king. "Stay where you are, be happy still. But I envy you. Your dusty cap is worth more than my golden crown. Your mill does more for you than my kingdom can do for me. If there were more such men as you, what a good place this world would be! Goodby, my friend!"

The king turned about, and walked sadly away; and the miller went back to his work, singing:—

Oh, I'm as happy as happy can be,

For I live by the side of the River Dee!"

康庇禮念完了以後,向林祖義說:

『你且把這後面幾段裏的 infinintive 和動詞的 tense 解說 一下。』

林祖義正在思慮**有**莫惠英不答理他的事情,心裏充滿了羞 (86) • 英 文 困 舉 記 • 愧和悔恨,並沒有注意聽功課。先前他們所討論的許多 infinitive 和動詞的 tense 他都沒有留心,這時忽然叫他來解釋,他 顿時覺得莫名其妙,眼看着書呆了半響,也不知其所以然。康 庇禮早已看出了他的神色,不由得就向他說:

『你是怎麼囘事呢?難道是心裏是有什麼事情嗎?』康庇 聽說罷,笑着,又向他旁邊的莫惠英說:

『還是你來解釋罷!』

莫惠英於是不慌不忙地說道:

II do not know 的裏面, know 是個沒有 to 的 infinitive. I can easily tell 裏面, tell 也是個沒有 to 的 infinitive. I owe not a penny to any man 裏面, to 是個 preposition, 與 infinitive 沒有關係。 Why should I not be happy 裏面, be 也是沒有 to 的 infinitive. than my kingdom can do for me 裏面, do 也是沒有 to 的 infinitive. the miller went back to his work 裏面, to 是 preposition, 也和 infinitive 沒有關係。關於 tense 方面,也還和前面幾段是一樣的,凡是敍述文,多半是 past tense; 至於引用的會話,則多半是 present tense.』

『你說的都對了!』康庇禮稱證她。『下次我們要研究 名詞和代名詞。你們囘家後,把第四十五頁那課 Sir Walter Raleigh 仔細讀一讀,對於裏面的名詞和代名詞要特別注意。 最好你們在讀那課書以前,先把從前所學過的文法中關於名詞 和代名詞的部份用功溫習一遍,然後依照文法,將那課書裏所 有的名詞和代名詞都仔細分析研究一番。下星期上誤時我們舉 行一個考試,專考那課書裏的名詞和代名詞。現在下課的時間 還沒有到,我不妨先把那課書裏的生字解釋一下。』康庇禮於 是念那課書道:

Sir Walter Raleigh

There once lived in England a brave and noble man whose name was Walter Raleigh. He was not only brave and noble, but he was also handsome and polite; and for that reason the queen made him a knight, and called him Sir Walter Raleigh.

康庇禮念完了第一段就解釋裏面的生字道:『sir 這個字當第一個字母 s 用小寫的時候,是尊稱人家為先生、足下、閣下的意思。用英文來說就是: a polite form of address used in addressing a man to whom one wishes to show respect. Sir 的第一個字母 S 要是大寫時,就是英國爵士或從男爵之尊稱。 用英文解釋就是: the title used before the first name of a knight or baronet. brave 是: without fear, having courage, willing to meet danger. noble 是: high and great in character. not only.......but also......是一個很常用的連接語,意思是「不但……而且……」。 handsome 是 good-looking的意思。』康庇禮將生字解釋完畢又繼續往下念道:

I will tell you about it.

When Raleigh was a young man, he was one day walking along a street in London. At that time the streets were not paved, and there were no side-walks. Raleigh was dressed in very fine style, and he wore a beautiful scarlet cloak thrown over his shoulders.

康庇禮說: "To pave a street means to cover a street with stones, bricks, etc. A side-walk is a place for foot passengers to walk at the side of a street. Style means fashion. Cloak is a loose, outer garment with or without

sleeves. Scarlet is a very bright red." 康庇禮用英文將生字解釋完畢又繼續往下念:

As he passed along, he found it hard work to keep from stepping in the mud, and soiling his handsome new shoes. Soon he came to a puddle of muddy water which reached from one side of the street to the other. He could not step across. Perhaps he could jump over it.

As he was thinking what he should do, he happened to look up. Who was it coming down the street. on the other side of the puddle?

It was Elizabeth, the Queen of England, with her train of gentlewomen and waiting maids. She saw the dirty puddle in the street. She saw the handsome young man with the scarlet cloak, standing by the side of it. How was she to get across?

康庇禮解釋說: 『keep from 的意思是 avoid, prevent from doing. soil 是 make dirty. Puddle is a small dirty pool. train 的意思是 a group of followers. Gentlewomen are women of good birth and manners.』康庇禮解釋完畢又繼續往下念:

Young Raleigh, when he saw who was coming, forgot about himself. He thought only of helping the queen. There was only one thing that he could do, and no other man would have thought of that.

He took off his scarlet cloak, and spread it across the puddle. The queen could step on it now, as on a beautiful carpet. She walked across. She was safely over the ugly puddle, and her feet had not touched the mud. She paused a moment, and thanked the young man.

康庇禮解釋道:『spread 是[鋪開],「覆蓋」。 carpet 是「毛毯」。 ugly 在這個地方不是「饒陋」的意思,是「危險」的意思。 'paused a moment'就是 stopped a moment. 在這三段裏所應當注意的是那兩個 across, 一個是: spread it across the puddle. 這個 across 是 preposition. 還有一個是: She walked across. 這個 across 是 adverb.』康庇禮於是又接着念下去:

As she walked onward with her train, she asked one of the gentlewomen, "Who is that brave gentleman who helped us so handsomely?"

"His name is Walter Raleigh," said the gentlewoman. "He shall have his reward," said the queen.

Not long after that, she sent for Rafeigh to come toher palace.

The young man went, but he had no scarlet cloak towear. Then, while all the great men and fine ladies of England stood, the queen made him a knight, And from that time he was known as Sir Walter Raleigh, the queen's favourite.

Sir Walter Raleigh and Sir Humphrey Gilbert, about whom I have already told you, were half-brothers.

When Sir Humphrey made his first voyage to America, Sir Walter was with him. After that, Sir Walter tried several times to send men to this new country to make a settlement. But those whom he sent found only great forests, and wild beasts, and savage Indians. Some of them went back to England; some of them died for want of food; and some of them were lost in the woods. At last Sir Walter gave up trying to get people to go to America.

康庇禮解釋說:『onward 就是 forward 的意思。 handsomely 是 adverb,恰和中國話裏的「漂亮」差不多。中國話裏常有說做事做得「漂亮」,或做事做得「不漂亮」的。可見無論中西,「漂亮」都不一定限於形容面貌。 reward 是「酬報」;palace 是「王宮」。 a favourite is a person or thing that is liked most. A half-brother is a brother by one parent only. A voyage is a journey by water. Settlement 是「拓殖」,是「殖民」,是 the settling of persons in a new country. savage 是野蠻的,未開化的。 give up 是「放棄」』。康庇禮解釋完畢後又繼續往下念:

But he found two things in that country which the people of England knew very little about. One was the potato, the other was tobacco.

If you should ever go to Ireland, you may be shown the place where Sir Walter planted the few potatoes which he carried over from America. He told his friends how the Indians used them for food; and he proved that they would grow in the Old World as well in the New.

Sir Walter had seen the Indians smoking the leaves of the tobacco plant. He thought that he would do the same, and he carried some of the leaves to England. Englishmen had never used tobacco before that time; and all who saw Sir Walter puffing away at a roll of leaves thought that it was a strange sight.

One day as he was sitting in his chair and smoking, his servant came into the room. The man saw the smoke curling over his master's head, and he thought that he was on fire.

He ran out for some water. He found a pail that was quite full. He hurried back, and threw the water into Sir Walter's face. Of course the fire was all put out.

After that a great many men learned to smoke. And now tobacco is used in all countries of the world. It would have been well if Sir Walter Raleigh had let it alone.

康庇禮解釋道:『potato 是「馬鈴薯」; tobacco 是「煙草」。Old World、「舊世界」,是指歐洲而言。New World 「新世界」,是指美洲而言。puffing away 的意思很多,在這個地方是 continue to puff,譬如說: puffing away at a roll of leaves, puffing away at his pipe. strange sight是「奇異的景象」。curling over his head 是「盤繞在他的頭頂之上」。 on fire 是「失火」; set fire 是「放火」。 The house was on fire 是「那房子着了火」。 He set fire to the house 是「他放火燒那房子」。 pail 和 bucket 都是一種「吊桶」。 put out 的意思也很多,在這個地方是 extinguish,即「消」,「滅」之意。如: put out the fire; put out the lights. into one's face 是一個值得注意的 phrase. face 這個東西,並不是一個中空的容器,用普通常識來判斷,似乎是只能說 to the face, on the face, 不能說 in the face, into the face; 但在實際上說 in the face, into the face 的時候很多。這些習慣的用法

,是得要留心暗記的。』

康庇禮在那裏解釋生字的時候,全班學生都低着頭努力作 筆記,盡力設法把康庇禮所講的都記下去。惟獨林祖義一人, 坐在那裏只顧發呆,只顧思慮自己的心事,好像把上評作筆記 的事情都完全忘記了。康庇禮看林祖義只是發呆,沒有作筆記 ,就笑着向林祖義說:

『Mr. Lin, 我所講的你都記得嗎?』

林祖義聽康庇禮叫他的名字,知道康庇禮是在和他說話了。他於是趕忙抬起頭來,睁大了兩個眼睛,望着康庇禮的臉。 但是他並沒有聽清康庇禮所說的是什麼話,所以仍然坐在那裏 發呆,好像是從夢裏初醒似的。

這時已敲下課鐘, 康庇禮遂拿起書來, 表示要下課。他臨 走時又對林祖義說:

『你總得好好念書,我們下次還要舉行考試呢!』他說着 ,就走出去了。

VIII. 意外中的意外

林祖義只知道是要考試,但並不知道所要考的是什麼東西 ,因此他無從準備,心裏很為發急。他曾經想到再去找莫惠英 ,請她指點一切,但是這一次他再也沒有這種勇氣了。他想 :『假如我到她家裏去,她還是不睬不理,那不是更難為情 嗎?到那時,她的家,眞是進去容易出來難了!』因此他左 思右想,總沒有勇氣再到莫惠英家裏去。不過他無從預備功課 ,怎麼又辦呢?他想來想去,最後他忽然想到了劉恆育。他覺 得:劉恆育英文程度很好,而且為人也很忠實,不如找他去 問問看吧!他拿定了主意,於是就出門要到劉恆育家裏去。他 走在半路上,忽然迎面遇見了劉恆育。他忍不住大聲向劉恆育 呼道:

『恆育兄,你往那裏去呀?我正要到府上去找你,和你一同研究英文呢!下星期的考試,我還一點沒有預備,眞急壞了 啪!』

『你要去找我嗎?那正好!』劉恆育也很喜歡地說:『我 現在正要到莫惠英家裏去,也是為的準備下星期考試的事情。 既這樣,我們就一同去罷!』

這事又是出乎林祖義意料之外的。他去找劉恆育,本來是 因為他不敢再到莫惠英家裏去;不料中途遇見了劉恆育,却反 而約他一同去訪莫惠英。於是當時他立刻答應了劉恆育,和劉 恆育一同走到莫惠英家裏去。因為他覺得:和劉恆育一塊兒去 ,他的胆子可以大得多了。即使莫惠英不理會他,但總不能說 也不理會劉恆育。他自己站在旁邊,倒可以察言觀色,量機行 事呢!不過同時他也有一件覺得不痛快的事。他這件不痛快的 事就是:他現在開始發覺,常去找莫惠英的人,除了他自己而 外,還有劉恆育。他心裏好像認為:他自己去找莫惠英是沒有關係的,最好別人都不要去找她。

他和劉恆育—同到了莫惠英家裏,看莫惠英和孫重美正在 那裏研究英文。劉恆育—見了莫惠英就向她說:

『我們今天特意來此 , 是要懇請莫小姐指教我們英文 的 。』

『大家都是同學,只能說彼此在一塊兒研究,那裏敢當 指数」二字呢!』莫惠英一邊說着,一邊就去泡上茶來,遞給 劉恆育和林和義。

林祖義留心觀察莫惠英的神氣,他覺得她對於他自己倒並 不是十分討厭,不過她很害羞,常不好意思單獨和他在一起談 話罷了。當劉恆育在旁的時候,她也是有說有笑;但是劉恆育 若走開,她也就馬上走開,不願意單獨和林祖義談話。

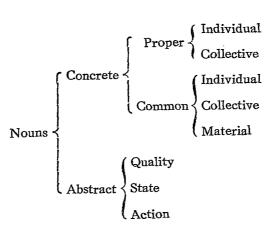
劉恆育問到下星期考英文的事, 莫惠英說:

『康先生上次吩咐我們溫習文法中關於名詞和代名詞的兩部份,並說下星期要考那課讀本裏的名詞和代名詞。我現在正和孫重美在這裏準備咧!』

『我記得從前在文法書上所學過的,名詞分成五大種類, 什麼 Proper Nouns, Common Nouns, Collective Nouns, Nouns of Material, Abstract Nouns, 我始終沒有把這五種 的區別鬧清楚。』林祖義望着莫惠英的臉說。

『關於各種名詞的分類,不過是文法家為研究上的便利起見,加以劃分的罷了。有時不同的文法家就會有不同的分類法,所以這種分類的名目就是記不住也沒有什麼大關係的。』莫惠英說着,就拿起粉筆來,在後牆上懸掛着的一個小黑板上,一邊寫着,一邊說道:

『有的文法書上,關於名詞種類的劃分是這樣的:



不過我們學習文法的目的,並不在乎能強記各種分類的名目,不過在能徹底了解各種品詞的性質和用法罷了。』莫惠英講罷,就走到桌前坐下來。

『我還記得文法上對各種名詞所率的例子大概是這樣的。』 劉恆育說着,也走過去拿起粉筆來在黑板上寫:

- Proper Nouns: Campbell (person), Bible (book), Shanghai (city), China (country),......
- 2. Common Nouns: man, book, country,.....
- 3. Collective Nouns: flock, crowd, herd, class, party, group, gang.....
- 4. Material Nouns: iron, gold, water, wood, flour, stone,.........
- 5. Abstract Nouns:

Quality: bravery, patriotism, cleverness, height,.... State: poverty, slavery, illness, pleasure, bondage, Action: advance, movement, acceptance, flight,.... 林祖義看劉恆育寫完了,就插嘴說道:

『我記得文法上關於名詞這一部份,除了上面這五種分類而外,還有三件重要的事情。那就是 gender, number 和 case. 請莫小姐再講給我們聽聽罷。』林祖義說時不住地看着莫惠英的臉。 莫惠英被看得不好意思,低下頭去,對旁邊的孫重美說:

『重美,你講給他聽罷!』

『人家叫你講 , 你怎麼又轉而叫我講 ? 』孫重美反駁她 說。

『我已經講了老大半天了。你坐在這裏,始終一言不發, 難道都該我一個人講的不成?』 莫惠英好像生了氣,和她吵了 起來。

『莫小姐已經講過一次,她也有點累了。這次就請孫小姐 講罷!』劉恆育也在旁催促孫重美。孫重美被各方面催促得沒 法,只好講道:

『gender 就是「性別」的意思。各種名詞的 gender 可以分成四類,那就是:

- 1. Masculine Gender, as man, boy,.....
- 2. Feminine Gender, as woman, girl,.....
- 3. Neuter Gender, as house, stone,.....
- 4. Common Gender, as parent, child,.....

There are three different ways by which a Masculine noun is distinguished from a Feminine:—

1. By a Change of Ending.

Masculine	Feminine	Masculine	Feminine
Actor	actress	Master	mistress
• 意外中的意	296 •		(97)

Author	authoress	Poet	poetess
Emperor	empress	Prince	princess
God	goddess	Tiger	tigress
Lion	lioness	Widower	widow
Hero	heroine		

2. By a Change of Word

Masculine	Feminine	Masculine	Feminine
Boy	girl	Husband	wife
Brother	sister	King	queen
Cock	hen	Lord	lad y
Dog	bitch	Man	woman
Father	mother	Nephew	niece
Gentleman	lady	Son	daughter
Bachelor	maid	Uncle	aunt
Horse	mare	Wizard	witch

3. By placing a Word Before or after.

Masculine	Feminine	Masculine	Feminine
He-goat	she-goat	Bride-groom	bride
Land-lord	land-lady	Great-uncle	Great-aunt
Man-servant	maid-servant	Pea-cock	pea-hen
Grand-father	grand-mother	Cock-sparrow	hen-sparrow

上面所講的是關於 gender 的方面。關於 number 一方面,普通分成 Singular number 和 Plural number 兩種。不過 Proper, Material,和 Abstract nouns 沒有 plural,除非它們 也能當 Common nouns 用。 The general rule for forming the Plural number of a noun is by adding s to the

Singular; as:---

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Book	books	School	schools
Teacher	teachers	Воу	boys
Student	students	Girl	girls

But if the Noun ends in s, x, sh, or ch, the Plural is formed by adding es to the Singular; as—

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Glass	glasses	Tax	taxes
Gas	gases	Box	boxes
Mass	masses	Bench	benches
Dish	dishes	Coach	coaches

If the noun ends in y and the y is preceded by a consonant, the Plural is formed by changing the y into

es:----

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Baby	babies	Army	armies
Story	stories	Navy	navies
Treaty	treaties	Duty	duties

But if the final y is preceded by a vowel, as in ay, ey, or oy, the Plural is formed by simply adding s to the Singular, in accordance with the general rule:——

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Boy	boys	Valley	valleys
Day	days	Play	plays
Monkey	monkeys	Тоу	toys
Key	keys	Joy	joys

[•] 意外中的意外 •

If the Noun ends in o and the o is preceded by a consonant, the Plural is generally (not always) formed by adding es to the Singular:——

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural*
Buffalo	buffaloes	Motto	mottoes
Cargo	cargoes	Negro	negroes
Echo	echoes	Potato	potatoes
Hero	heroes	Tomato	tomatoes
Mosquito	masquitoes	Volcano	volcanoes

But if the o is preceded by a vowel, the Plural is formed by simply adding s to the Singular:——

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Bamboo	bamboos	Curio	curios
Cameo	cameos	Embryo	embryos
Cuckoo	cuckoos	Portfolio	portfolios

The plural of nouns ending in f or fe is formed, sometimes by adding s, sometimes by changing f or fe to ves. For this there is no rule.

Proup A.

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Belief	beliefs	Hoof	hoofs
Dwarf	dwarfs	Muff	muffs
Chief	chiefs	Proof	proofs
Cliff	cliffs	Reef	reefs
Fife	fifes	Roof	roofs
Grief	griefs	Safe	safes
Gulf	gulfs	Strife	strifes

(100)

•英文困學記•



Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Beef	beeves	Loaf	loaves
Calf	calves	Shelf	shelve s
Elf	elves	Self	selves
Half	halves	Sheaf	sheaves
Knife	knives	Thief	thiev es
Leaf	leaves	Wife	wives
Life	lives	Wolf	wolves

Proup C.

Singular	Plural	
Scarf	scarfs,	scarves,
Staff	staffs,	staves,
Wharf	wharfs.	wharves.

There are eight Nouns in common use, which form the Plural by a change in the middle of the word:——

Singular	Plural	Singular	Plural
Man	men	Tooth	teeth
Woman	women	Louse	lice
Foot	feet	Mouse	mice
Goose	geese	Dormouse	dormice

There are three Nouns which form the Plural in en:

Ox—oxen; child—children; Brother—brethren

Some Nouns have the same form in the Plural as in
the Singular:—

• 意外中的意外 •

(101)

Deer	\mathbf{dozen}	fish	apparatus
Sheep	score	furniture	heathen
Some N	nune have r	on Singular at	11

Some Nouns have no Singular at all:

Scissors mathematics compasses news Shears spectacles politics means Tongs measles eaves tidings Pincers gallows arms goods fetters Trousers riches annals

上面所譯的都是關於名詞的 number 各種問題,還有關於 case 的問題,請莫小姐繼續講吧,我已經講得累了。』孫重美說到、 道裏,就自己倒滿一杯茶來捧着喝。

莫惠英於是接着讓下去道:

『關於名詞有三個重要問題,那就是 gender, number. case. 關於 case, 也可分為三種, 那就是 the Nominative, the Objective, the Possessive.

The boy studies English.

The hunter killed a tiger.

在這兩句裏, boy 和 hunter 都是在 Nominative case, 因為它們都是 sentence 裏面的 subject. English 和 tiger 都 是在 Objective case, 因為它們都是動詞的 object.

The student's book is here.

The boy's leg was hurt.

在這兩句裏, student's 和 boy's 都是在 possessive case 裏的。

The Possessive Singular of a noun is formed by adding apostrophe s ('s) to the singular form. Examples: dog, dog's; man, man's; rat, rat's; Mr. Campbell, Mr.

(102)

Campbell's.

The Possessive Plural of a noun is formed—(a) by adding an apostrophe only (') to the plural form if it ends in s; (b) by adding apostrophe s ('s) to the plural form if it does not end in s. Examples:

- (a) boys, boys'; dogs, dogs'; the Mrs. Campbells, the Mrs. Campbells'
- (b) men, men's; oxen, oxen's; sheep, sheep's. Other idiomatic usages of the possessive:

a day's work a week's vacation
an hour's thought three months' salary
a moment's delay two years' study
the sun's rays our country's needs
the moon's beams duty's call
a stone's throw love's sacrifices
for mercy's sake. Rome's ambition

我所知道的關於 possessive case 的智識,就只是這一點了。」 莫思英識完也拿起茶壺來把每人面前的杯子都倒滿了。

『還有關於代名詞的部份 , 也請孫小姐講給我們聽吧!』 劉恆育又對孫重美說。

『關於代名詞的一部份,你比我清楚得多咧! 我只知道代名詞分為:

- (1) Personal Pronouns: I, you, he, she, it, etc.
- (2) Demonstrative Pronouns: this, that, such, etc.
- (3) Relative Pronouns: which, who, that, as, etc.
- (4) Interrogative Pronouns: who? which? what?

the journey's end

(5) Indefinite Pronouns: some, any, all, both, etc. 但是上次你自己曾經寫出一張表,比我現在所說的清楚得多了,難道你自己又忘了嗎?』孫重美說着,就翻開書來尋找,不一會找出一張紙來。 林祖義仲過頭去一看, 原來是這樣一個表:

Per-	number	Case		
son	namber	Nominative	Possessive	Objective
I.	s.	I	My (mine)	Ме
	pl.	We	Our (mine)	Us
11.	s.	you or thou	your(yours)or thy (thine)	You or thee
	pl	you or ye	your (yours)	You
III.	s.	He	His (His)	Him
	s.	She	Her (Hers)	Her
	8.	It '	Its (—)	it
	pl.	They	Their (Theirs)	Them

林祖義看了一會說道:

『這張表的確立得很清楚呢! 不過這只是關於 Personal Pronouns 一部份的,還有於關於其餘那四部份,却並沒有包含在內。』

『所以我說請孫小姐講給我們聽。誰知孫小姐倒反而和我 們客氣起來了。』劉恆育望着孫重美的臉說。

林祖義這時才漸漸看出來,劉恆育來到莫惠英家裏,其意 並不在莫惠英,却是在孫重美身上。林祖義看出了這種情勢以

後,心裏反而安貼了許多。他但聽得孫重美說道:

『在 Demonstrative Pronouns 裏頭, 最重要的有 this, that, these, those, such 等等。

- Work and play are both necessary to health; this
 (=play) gives us rest, and that (=work) gives us
 energy.
- Dogs are more faithful animals than cats; these
 (= cats) attach themselves to places, and those
 (= dogs) to persons.
- 3. Such men as are in the married state wish to get out, and such as are out wish to get in.

上面這幾個都是 Demonstrative Pronouns 的例子。』

『你上面所舉的這三個例句都很有意思呀!尤其是那第三句,「沒有結婚的人想結婚,結了婚的人又想離婚,」這是什麽意思呢?』劉恆育好像懷着無限好奇的心理追問孫重美。

『究竟是什麼意思我也不知道,我不過也是從書上看來的 罷了。』孫重美避去劉恆育的眼光,又繼續往下說:

『所謂 Interrogative Pronouns 就是 who, whom, what, which 這些字。譬如說:

- 1. Who is he?
- 2. Whose book is that?
- 3. Whom do you want to see?
- 4. What did he say?
- 5. Which is the shortest way?

Indefinite Pronouns 是 some, any, one, none, both, each, 這些字。

- 1. Some say yes and some say no.
- · 海外中的意外。

- 2. I do not want any of these books.
- 3. One does not like to have one's word doubted.
- 4. You have a book, but I have none.
- 5. Both of them were married.
- 6. Each of the boys has his own book.

Relative Pronouns 本來是比較複雜的一部份,我們中國人學習時,更應當特別注意的。在這裏有兩條概括的原則,是要記住的:

a. A Relative Pronoun must agree with its antecedent in gender, number, and person. Examples:

The Road (Third Person Singular) that leads (Third Person Singular) to the shore is sandy.

The men (Third Person Plural) who were (Third Person Plural) here are artists.

b. The case of a Relative Pronoun has nothing to do with its antecedent, but depends on the construction of its own clause. Examples:

Give help to anyone who needs it.

Is Richard the man whom you mean? 重要的 Relative Pronouns 有 who, whom, whose, which, that, what 等,還有 Compound Relative Pronouns 像 whoever, whomever, whosesoever, whatever, whichever 等。

- 1. Any one who wishes can do that,
- 2. He is the man whom I am looking for.
- 3. The man whose hat I took by mistake was very angry.

- 4. This is the book which I have read.
- 5. That is the very thing that I wanted.
- 6. What is done, cannot be undone.
- 7. He helps whoever is in need of help.
- 8. He told the story to whomever he met.
- 9. Return it to whosesoever address is on it.
- 10. Do whatever you like.
- 11. Choose whichever you please.

The Relative pronoun in the Objective case can be omitted:—

This is the book you want.

The man I met to-day was an old friend.

上面所講的都是幾個普通的 Relative Pronouns. 關於這方面,問題還很多,可是我一時也講不出來了。』

這時劉恆育已經拿出一張紙來,把孫重美所講的例句都抄 了下去。他抄完了向孫重美說:

『幸虧今天我們來找你指教,要不然,那裏能得這許多寶 貴的材料。關於名詞和代名詞的內容,我們算是知道了一個大 概的輪廓。不過康先生還叫我們研究上次所念過的那課書裏面 的名詞和代名詞的情形,不知道究竟應該怎樣研究法。』

『關於那一課書,我也還沒有開始預備呢,』孫重美說。 『不過我想預備的方法,也無非是把那課書裏所有的名詞和代名詞都找了出來,用我們所已經知道的文法智識來分析它們和認識它們,看它們一個個都是屬於那一類並具有什麼性質。我也預備的方法也不過就是這麼一套。但我所講的,只是代表我自己的意見,究竟對不對,我並不負責任。假如你們都照我說的話去預備,結果預備錯了,到考試的時候考不出來,那可不 要怪我。』孫重美說着,自己也不免笑了起來。

正在這時,莫惠英的母親忽然走了進來,說:

『現在午飯已經好了,就請劉先生和林先生在這裏吃午飯吧。我們也沒有特別預備什麼菜,就是吃便飯。』

莫惠英和孫重美聽了也竭力挽留他倆在那裏吃午飯。林祖 義本來是無可無不可的,但他看劉恆育很客氣,一定要同家, 於是他就和劉恆育採取一致行動,一同辭出了莫家,各自囘案 去了。

IX. 罷考時的收穫

學校自從賴爾慈辭職,換了中國人當校長以後,行政上常常就有一種不穩定的傾向。有一部數職員因為不滿意校長陳華陸,於是就鼓動一部分學生,發起驅逐校長的風潮。有一般好事而不喜歡讀書的學生,每天只是開會,演講,貼標語,高喊着罷課,把好好一個學校弄得關稽榜。

Correct the mistakes in the following sentences:

- 1. He has done lots of works.
- 2. I shall have two works to finish.
- 3. Lots of boy can jump over.
- 4. Lot of chinese people do not like to take cold baths.
- 5. Here is much rooms for you.
- 6. I cut the leafs with knifes.
- 7. Bring here many chalks.
- 8. Please give me a chalk.
- 9. There are many kinds of apple.
- 10. What kind of apples is that?
- 11. Have you any moneys?
- 12. Give me one money.
- 13. Many peoples are here.
- 14. I want to drink some waters.
- 15. The shepherd watches his sheeps.

- 16. These three fishes are good to eat.
- 17. We are hunting deers.
- 18. The cattles are feeding in the pasture.
- 19. We make friend with each other.
- 20. Name some writers of olden time.
- 21. It costs ten cashes.
- 22. He cut it with his scissor.
- 23. We live in Shanghai's city.
- 24. They go by feet.
- 25. The students have studied their lessons for sometimes.
- 26. I spent two o'clock in reading.
- 27. He is one of the famous scholar.
- 28. I am puzzled in regards to this problem.
- 29. He bought a new clothe.
- 30. I bought two clothes.
- 31. They are collecting the odd and end.
- 32. It's lots of fun.
- 33. To-morrow will be a vacation.
- 34. The Chineses and Americans are good friends.
- 35. I eat breads and drink milks.
- 36. I eat two meats for breakfast.
- The students have more classes on Monday than on Saturday.
- 38. He is a great scientist in Chinese nation.
- 39. In olden time people ate raw things.
- 40. I came here before yesterday.

- 41. I want to make friend with him.
- 42. I spent three o'clocks in preparing my lessons.
- 43. I do not like black colour.
- 44. He is a friend of me.
- 45. He is a friend of my father.
- 46. Let's me try it.
- 47. Which dog is my?
- 48. Is very hard to study English?
- 49. What time is now?
- 50. Give me that what you have.
- 51. Tell me that why he was absent.
- 52. On that holiday was very fine.
- 53. Those their parents are here have gone.
- 54. All play well can beat them.
- 55. That room belongs to theirs.
- 56. One who takes that belongs to others is called a thief.
- 57. Husband and wife must help one another.
- 58. Sisters and brothers should love each other.
- 59. I have not.
- 60. It is me.
- 61. It is my.
- 62. It is them.
- 63. My stick is longer than he.
- 64. I please you sit down.
- 65. His name is called what?
- 66. That is him.

- 67. What one is your uncle?
- 68. You have many pencils but I have not.
- 69. Who are you talking about?
- 70. How much is your age?
- 71. Which man is that?
- 72. His uncle was sick last week died to-day.
- 73. They did not say they want what.
- 74. It was he did that deed.
- 75. His sister, her book you read, studies very diligently.
- 76. You cheated you.
- 77. I call me a scholar.
- 78. Ourselves were here.
- 79. What man do you want to see?
- 80. Myself did it.
- 81. Tell any man you see.
- 82. One does not come here is impolite.
- 83. It is he they wish to see.
- 84. Which was the man came here yesterday.
- 85. Anything comes to pass, we are to blame.
- 86. Any one you take may be yours.
- 87. All the other do not like it.
- 88. Anybody can do this is a wise man.
- 89. Who took that was a thief.
- 90. The boy found the toys and put it into his box-
- 91. She opened his book and studied them.
- 92. Yours are the brightest.

- 93. I took several.
- 94. The sky is growing dark.
- 95. The sky will soon snow.
- 96. How heavily the rains are.
- 97. The weather will not soon rain.
- 98. The rains very heavily.
- 99. No of them will come.
- 100. What one is yours, this or that?
- 101. That man is who?
- 102. I and you took as much as him.
- 103. I and Mr. Wang study in the same class.
- 104. I and his brother worked together.
- 165. I and he and you do not like it.
- 106. He, you and I visited that street.
- 107. You, I and he are all here
- 108. I and you have studied this book.
- 109. The workman doesn't know what to do it.
- 110. It is I's.
- 111. The white ones are their.
- 112. Your dog is smaller than I have.
- 113. He has a better book than I.
- 114. He is taller than me.
- 115. You say English better than him.
- 116. She is wiser than him.
- 117. He is weaker than me.
- 118. I am stronger than him.
- 119. That was him.

- 120. Let I try it.
- 121. An ant can touch with his feelers.
- 122. The moon does not have light of his own.
- 123. The sun has her own light.
- 124. China has his own culture.
- 125. My are not so good as your.
- 126. They run as fast as us.
- 127. We are as brave as them.
- 128. My children are not so tall as me.
- 129. You are as weak as me.
- 130. Once there was a philosopher who's name was Confucius.
- 131. Who do you like?
- 132. You and them are not so careful.
- 133. Come with I.
- 134. They kicked the ball with his feet.
- 135. She plays piano with his right hand.
- 136. These are theirs parents.
- 137. Those books are their.
- 138. He's brother is not here.
- 139. Come to I.
- 140. That is mine book.

他們那個教室的四周是一面窗戶,三面黑板。康庇禮寫到 第一百四十句的時候,三面黑板都完全寫滿了。康庇禮看無處 可以[寫,就說道:

『已經寫不下了,算了能。今天的題目,就考這一點能!』 班上的學生們,看題日這麼多,而且這麼難,不由得都嚇 歌住了。停了一會:一個學生站起來說:

『康先生,題目太多了,我們一點鐘答不完。』

『答不完沒有關係,各人盡自己的力量,答多少算多少。 』康庇禮說。

『你所出的題目都不是書上的呀!你上來叫我預備那課書 裏面的名詞和代名詞,我們是照你的話預備的,但是你並不照 你說的那樣考。』後面又有一個學生大聲說。

『我叫你們預備那課書裏面的名詞和代名詞,意思是叫你們拿那課書做實驗品,去反證你們所學過的文法。』康庇禮說。『假如你們點那課書裏面的名詞和代名詞都能分析認識得清楚,當然你們對於我所寫的這一百四十句話的名詞和代名詞也能分析認識得清楚。學文法本來是要「舉一反三」和「閉一知十」的。如果你們只是對於在課堂上所學過的讀本裏的文法能夠懂得,別的書裏面的文法就不懂得了,這種文法學了有什麼用呢?』

康庇禮雖是這樣說,班上有許多學生還是答不出來。那些 答不出來的學生都顯出急躁的樣子,在位上好像一時一刻都坐 不安。恰巧這時外面有幾個高中部的學生吹着警笛,邀集大家 到禮堂去開會,於是那些不會解答考題的學生都一關站了起來 大家嚷着說:

『我們還要去開會呢,下次再考罷!』說罷,他們都絡續 跑出去了。

這時班上所剩下的只有莫惠英、孫重美、林祖義、劉恆育、姜亮茂、高鴻才,和其餘三個女生,兩個男生。康庇禮看班上學生都快跑光了,就對剩下的幾個學生說:

『考試這件事情並不是讀書的目的,不過是督促讀書的一 種手段設了。只要大家都能努力用功讀書,時刻不解,就是把 考試取消,也沒有關係。有許多學生把分數看得和第二生命一樣,好像認為讀書就是為的去應付考試似的。在考試以前,拼命開夜車,背死書;一旦考試完畢,就把書本丟得遠遠地,再也不看。這實在是大大的錯誤了。』康庇禮先發了一番牢騷, 停一會,又繼續慢慢地說道:

『就如這一次,我說要舉行考試,意思不過想借此機會, 把學過的文法加以溫習和運用。其實只要你們獲得了溫習和運 用的機會,我就是記分或不記分,又有什麼關係呢?現在大家 既都不願意考試,我們不妨就把這試題當作習題,大家來練習 練習吧!』康庇顧說到這裏,就指着林祖義說道:

『Mr. Lin, 你先把前面的十句改正一改正看。假如你有改不好的地方,我再告訴你。』

林祖義聽罷 , 先將前十句仔細看一遍 , 想一想 , 然後說 道:

『work 這個字當「工作」講的時候是不能過數,不能加 s 的 ;如果加了 s 意思就變成「作品」了。所以第一句應當是:

- 1. He has done lots of work. 假如一定要說「許多工作」,那只得把 work 換成別的字。譬如 job 這個字,意思和 work 是一樣的,但是能過數,能加 s. 所以第二句應當是。
- 2. I shall have two jobs to finish. 第三句袅的 boy 應當加 s, 因為 lots of 是「許多的」意思。
 - 3. Lots of boys can jump over.

第四句的錯誤在 lot. lots of 和 a lot of 是兩個成器,是 a great number or amount 的意思。 lot 後面如不加 s 的時候,前面就要用 a. chinese 這個字的意思是 people of china,所以在chinese 後面不應當再加上 people —個字了。所以第四句該

是:

- 4. Lots of chinese do not like to take cold baths. 第五句: room 這個字當「房間」講的時候,是可以過數,可以 加 s 的;但當「空地方」講的時候,是不能過數,不能加 s 的。
- 5. Here is much room for you. leaf 的複數是 leaves; knife 的複數是 knives. 所以第六句應當是:

第五句裏的 room 是「空地方」的意思,所以不能加 s.

- 6. I cut the leaves with knives. chalk 這個字是 material noun, 不能過數,不能加 s. 所以不能設 many chalks, 只能說 many pieces of chalk.
 - 7. Bring many pieces of chalk here.
 - 8. Please give me a piece of chalk; or Please give me some chalk; or Please give me a little chalk.

a little 兩個字可以當作—個形容辭看待,意思是 a certain small quantity of.

第九句裏的 apple 應當加 s, 第十句裏的 apple 不應當加 s.

- 9. There are many kinds of apples.
- 10. What kind of apple is that? one kind of apple, many kinds of apples. 前面的 kind 變 成複數的時候, apple 也要變成複數。』

林祖義將前面十句改正完畢,康庇禮又叫劉恆育改正以下的十句。劉恆育解釋說:

『money 這個字是不能過數,不能加 s 的,所以只能說:

- 11. Have you any money?
- 12. Give me one cash.
- · 韶考時的收穫·

cash 當「現金」的意思用的時候,也是不能過數,不能加 s 的 o 不過第十二句裏的 cash 是「中國的有限小銅錢」的意思,可以說 one cash, two cash, three cash, 但不能加 s. people 這個字的意思是「人民」,雖不加 s, 也要拿它當複數字用。如果再加上 s, 就轉變成「民族」的意思了。所以第十三句應當是:

- 13. Many people are here.
 water 這個字是 material noun, 和 chalk, iron, paper 一樣,
 不能加 s; 如果加上 s, 意思就變成「海 \ 了。
- 14. I want to drink some water. sheep, fish, deer, 這些字,可以當單數用,同時也可以當複數用,當複數用的時候,不必加 s. cattle, people, swine, vermin,這些字的字尾雖沒有 s. 但都是複數的意思。所以下面四句裏的 sheep, fish, deer, cattle, 都不應當加 s.
 - 15. The shepherd watches his sheep.
 - 16. These three fish are good to eat.
 - 17. We are hunting deer.
 - 18. The cattle are feeding in the pasture.

至少耍有兩個人才能「交友」,所以耍說 make friends, 不能說 make friend.

- 19. We make friends with each other. time 這個字當「時代」講的時候要加 s.
- 20. Name some writers of old times. 我所知道的就是這一點,不知道說得完全不完全。』劉恆育很自識地說。

康庇禮將劉恆育諮證一會,又叫高鴻才繼續往下改正。高 增才說: 『cash 這個字是指中國的有眼的小銅錢而言,是不能加 s 的,前面已經說過了。所以第二十一句該是:

- 21. It costs ten cash.
- scissors 這個字末尾的 s 是不能去掉的。這個字永遠是複數。 和這同類的字還有 arms, fetters, tongs, shears, breeches, trousers, bowels, intestines 等等。這些字的末尾都是永遠附 有 s, 永遠用作複數。而且旣說是用「剪刀」剪,則用動詞 clip. 此用 cut 還要來得適當。所以第二十二句該是:
- 22. He clips it with scissors. 第二十三句 in Shanghai's city 不通,應改為:
- 23. We live in the city of Shanghai. 「步行」是 go on foot, 這是一句成語。雖然我們走路時一定。要用兩隻脚,不能只用一隻脚,但是在成語裏只說 foot, 不說 feet, 而且要說 on foot, 不能說 by foot. 此句應改為:
- 24. They go on foot. sometime 這個字的意思是 at some indefinite time; sometimes 的意思是 now and then. 這兩個字都是 adverb, 前面不能再加 for 之類的 preposition. 如果要用 for 這個字, 就得說 for some time. time 是 noun; some 是 adjective; for 是 preposition. 這三個字合在一塊是一個 prepositional phrase. 看第二十五句的意思, 好像是應當說:
 - 25. The students have studied their lessons for some time.
- 第二十六句和二十七句該是:
 - 26. I spent two hours in reading.
- 27. He is one of the famous scholars 因為是「許多學者中之一」,所以 scholar 要用複數。
 - 龍茅時的收穫。

- 28. I am puzzled in regard to this problem in regard to 的意思是「關於」。這是—個成語,不能說 in regards to.
 - 29. He bought a suit of new clothes.
- 30. I bought two suits of clothes. clothes 這個字永遠是複數,但前面不能加 one, two, three 這類的數詞。如果要說「幾套」太服,就用 suit 這個字。』

『第三十一句應該是:

- 31. They are collecting the odds and ends. odds and ends 的思意是「零星雜物」。這是一個成器,永遠 用複數,不能說 odd and end.
 - 32. It gives lots of fun.
 - 33. To-morrow will be a holiday.
- 34. The Chinese and Americans are good friends. American 是單數, Americans 是複數; Russian 是單數, Russians 是複數; Englishman 是單數, Englishmen 是複數; Chinese 是單數也是複數; Japanese 是單數也是複數;不能說 Chineses 或 Japaneses.
- 35. I eat bread and drink milk. bread 和 milk 不能加 s.
- 36. I eat two pieces of meat for breakfast. meat 不能加 s, 所以要說 two pieces of meat.
 - 37. The students have more classes on Mondays than Saturdays.
 - 38. He is a great scientist in China.

- 39. In old times, people ate raw things.
- 40. I came here the day before yesterday.
- 41. I want to make friends with him.
- 42. I spent three hours in preparing my lessons.
- 43. I do not like black.
- 44. He is a friend of mine.
- 45. He is a friend of my father's.

black 這個字已經有「顏色」的意思包括在內,所以後面不要再加 colour 那個字了。在 of 後面用 Possessive 本來是有點難明白的。不過有時只用 of, 意思不夠清楚,後面必須再來個 Possessive, 意思才能明顯。譬如: a picture of my father, 意思是「我父親的一張肯像」。 a picture of my father's, 意思是「我父親所有的一張畫」。這兩者的意思是很有區別的。』

康庇禮看姜亮友講到這裏 · 就叫他停住 · 轉臉向孫重美 說:

『關於名詞的一部分,現在是已經改完了,下面的都是關 於代名詞的錯誤,就請孫小姐繼續改正吧!』孫重美於是說:

『第四十六句應該是:

46. Let's try it; or

Let me try it; or

Let us try it.

Let's 是 Let us 的縮寫,所以不能在 Let's 後面再加個 me.

47. Which dog is mine?

My 是 possessive adjective, mine 才是 possessive pronoun. 這個地方要用 pronoun, 不能用 adjective.

48. Is it very hard to study English? it 是這句裏的 subject, 不可缺少。

• 龍孝時的收穫。

- 49. What time is it now? it 這個代名詞常常用來代替「時間」,「天氣」。
 - 50. Give me what you have.
- 51. Tell me why he was absent. what 在這個地方已經等於 that which, 所以 what 前面用不着再加一個 that. 這在文法上叫做 antecedent understood. 和這同類的字還有 who, whom, whatever, whosoever 等等。
- 52. On that holiday it was very fine. it 代表「天氣」, 是這句裏面的 subject.
 - 53. Those whose parents are here have gone.
 - 54. All those who play well can beat them.

五十三句裏缺少—個 Relative Pronoun 'whose',

·五十四句裏缺少一個 Relative Pronoun 'who'

55. That room belongs to them.

這個地方要用 them, 不能用 theirs.

56. One who takes that which belongs to others is called a thief.

五十六句裏缺少了一個 Relative Pronoun 'which'.

- 57. Husband and wife must help each other.
- 58. Sisters and brothers should love one another. each other 是用在二人彼此之間; one another 是用在二人以上多數人相互間。這個區別要認清楚。
 - 59. I have none.
 - 60. It is I.
 - 61. It is mine.
 - 62. It is they.

這四句都是錯在後面的 pronoun.』

孫重美講到這裏時康庇禮又叫莫惠英接着她解釋下去。莫 惠英說:

『第六十三句應該是:

- 63. My stick is longer than his.
- 64. Please sit down.

用新使語氣 (imperative mood) 的時候, you 那個 pronoun 是不要用的。

- 65. What is his name?
- 66. That is he.
- 67. Which man is your uncle?
- 68. You have many pencils, but I have none. none 這個字是個 Indefinite Demonstrative Pronoun.
 - 69. Whom are you talking about?
 - 70. What is your age?
 - 71. Who is that?
- 72. His uncle who was sick last week died to-day. 第七十二句裏缺少—個 Relative Pronun 'who'
 - 73. They did not say what they want.
 - 74. It was he who did that deed.
- 75. His sister, whose book you read, studies very diligently.
 - 76. You cheated yourself.
 - 77. I call myself a scholar.
 - 78. We ourselves were here.
 - 79. Whom do you want to see?
 - 80. I did it myself.
 - 81. Tell whomever you see.

- 82. Whoever does not come here is impolite.
- 83. It is he whom they wish to see.
- 84. Who was the man that came here yesterday.
- 85. Whatever comes to pass, we are to blame.
- 86. Whichever one you take may be yours.
- 87. All the others do not like it.
- 88. Whoever can do this is a wise man.
- 89. Whoever took that was a thief.

像 whoever, whatever, whichever, whosesoever, whomever 這些字, 叫做 Compound Relative Pronouns. 用這些字的時候, antecedent 都暗含在它們本身之內了。』

康庇禮看莫惠英說了半晌,好像有點累了,就向她說:

『你暫時就說到這裏 , 以下的讓我自己來解釋吧! 第 90 句和 91 句的錯誤都在 agreement.

- 90. The boy found the toys and put them into his box.
- 91. She opened her book and studied it. 在第90句裏,前面旣說 toys,後面當然要用 them,不能用 it. 因為 toys 是複數,所以後面代替它的代名詞也要用複數。在 第91句裏,前面旣是 she,後面當然也要用 her,不能用 his. book 是單數,所以後面的代名詞也只能用 it,不能用 them.
 - 92. Yours is the brightest of all.
 - 93. I took some.
 - 94. It is growing dark.
 - 95. It will soon snow.
 - 96. How heavily it rains!
 - 97. It will not rain presently.
 - 98. It rains very heavily.

[t 這個代名詞常時用來代替「天時」、「氣候」、「晴雨」、「時間」 等等事情。「天下雨」是中國話,譯為英文不能譯為 The sky rains. 應當譯為 It rains.

 None of them will come; or Neither of them will come.

前—句的意思多半是指二人以上而言,後—句的意思則只是說 二人之中無—人來。

- 100. Which is yours, this or that?
- 101. Who is that man?
- 102. You and I took as much as he.
- 103. Mr. Wang and I study in the same class.
- 104. His brother and I worked together.
- 105. You and he and I do not like it.
- 106. You, he and I visited that street.
- 107. You, he and I are all here.
- 108. You and I have studied this book.

英文中的習慣,爲自謙和尊敬別人起見,說到「我、你、他」這些代名詞的時候,總是先說 you,次說 he, 最後才說到 I.

- 109. The workman doesn't know what to do.
- 110. It is mine.
- 111. The white ones are theirs.
- 112. Your dog is smaller than mine; or Your dog is smaller than the one I have.
- 113. He has a better book than mine.
- 114. He is taller than I.
- 115. You speak English better than he.
- 116. She is wiser than he.

- 117. He is weaker than I.
- 118. I am stronger than he.

than 這個字是 conjunction, 是將一句中前後兩個 clause 連接 起來的。than 後面的那些 pronoun 像 I, he 都是第二個 clause 的 subject, 所以要用 subjective case 裏的字,不能用 me, him 那些 objective case 裏面的字。不過 I, he 那些 subject 後面的 predicate 都被省略去了,如果整個填寫起來,就比較容易期白。譬如:

- 114. He is taller than I (am tall).
- 115. You speak English better than he (speaks).
- 116. She is wiser than he (is wise).
- 117. He is weaker than I (am weak).
- 118. I am stronger than he (is strong).

這並不是說,在than 後面,絕對不可以用 objective case 裏面的字。用是可以用的,不過意思不同能了。譬如這兩句:

You like him better than I.

You like him better than me.

這兩句話在文法上都沒有錯,不過意思完全不同。我們若把省 去的部分填出來,馬上就可以明白了。

You like him better than I (like him).

You like him better than (you like) me.

像這種省略用法在文法上叫做 Ellipsis.』

(126)

康庇禮講到這裏時,在禮堂裏開會的學生們已經散會出來 。有幾個學生走近他們的課室,從窗口伸進頭去一看,見他們 環在上課,不由得都驚嘆似地喊道:

『我們都去開會了,他們還在這裏上課啊!』這個喊聲在 無形中好像有很大的吸引力,不久以後,許多學生都被吸引到 那個教室的門口去了。他們園在教室門口, 臉上都表露着驚訝 的神色, 彼此談論着開會和上課的問題。他們對於這件「別人 去開會而他們獨在上課」的一囘事情, 好像都懷抱着無限的義 憶和不平。

『凡是上課的都是校長的走狗!』—個學生終於抑不住他 那—股不平之氣而高聲叫了出來。

『打倒教狗子!』又有一個學生喊出了他胸中的義憤。

『甘心做洋奴!』也不知是誰在遠處叫了這麼一聲。

『打呀!打那些小子!』在更遠的地方,居然有人這樣亂 叫了。

這時康庇禮看教室外面的秩序已經很亂,其勢不能再繼續 講下去,於是就對教室裏的學生們說:

『下面所剩的這許多句子,你們自己去研究罷,我也不再 往下講了。』他說罷,就出了數室,從人選中悄悄地走了。

林祖義和莫惠英們看勢頭不對,也都偷偷溜出了數室,一 同跑到莫惠英家裏去。林祖義向莫惠英說:

『剩下的這幾十句,康先生沒有講完的,就請莫小姐講給 我們聽罷!』

莫惠英聽了也就不再客氣,放開喉嚨講解道: 『第 119 句 應當是:

- 119. That was he.
- 120. Let me try it.

me 是 let 的 object, 所以要用 me, 不能用 I. try 因為在 let 後面, 是沒有 to 的 infinitive.

- 121. An ant can touch with its feelers.
- 122. The moon does not have light of her own. 習慣上, moon 都用 she 來代表。

- 123. The sun has its own light.
- 124. China has her own culture.

習慣上,國家心是用 she 來代表。

- 125. Mine are not so good as yours.
- 126. They run as fast as we (run).
- 127. We are as brave as they (are brave).
- 128. My children are not so tall as I (am tall).
- 129. You are as weak as I (am weak).
- 130. Once there was a philosopher whose name was Confucius.
- 131. Whom do you like?
- 132. You and they are not so careful.
- 133. Come with me.

with 是 preposition, me 是它的 object, 所以不能用 I.

- 134. They kicked the ball with their feet.
- 135. She plays piano with her right hand.
- 136. These are their parents.
- 137. Those books are theirs.
- 138. His father is not here.
- 139. Come to me.
- 140. That is my book.
- to 也是 preposition, 所以後面要用 objective case 裏的字。』 莫惠英把全部講解完显,大家就都散了。

第二天早晨林祖義到學校去的時候,看校門口貼了一張很大的紅紙黑字的標語,上面寫着「打倒教狗子!」幾個字。他走到了教室,看教室門口也貼了一張綠紙黑字的標語,上面寫着一句:「誰上課誰就是洋奴!」他伸頭向教室內一看,裏面

空空連一個人影也沒有。不一會,姜亮友走來。他問姜亮友是 怎麼——囘事,姜亮友說:

『罷課的學生今天組織了一個糾察隊,說是遇見了上課的 學生要用童子軍棍打呢!所以今天大家都嚇得不敢來上課了。 』林祖義聽了心裏也害怕起來。他趕忙用衣角遮住手裏的書籍 ,順着牆角走出了學校的大門,一溜煙地跑囘家去了。

X. 不歡而終的遠足旅行

學校的風潮,鬧了一個多月,終逼得陳華陸辭職他去,換上了教務主任丁璠諍當校長,於是這一場駭人的風浪,才漸漸歸於平靜。不久到了春假,新校長丁璠爭為振奮學生的精神起見,特意演導全校學生作一次遠足旅行。一個風和日暖的早晨,從啓慧中學的大門裏走出一隊旗幟鮮明,制服整潔的學生來,男的在前,女的在後,鼓號喧天,沿着學校後面的官道,一直向西去。他們出了古西門,西行十二里,來到一個名叫芝子湖的地方,才停下來休息。這芝子湖是一個小小村鎮,旁邊有個淺水湖,因此得名。全體師生們沿着湖邊坐下,把帶來的食品打開,大家分着吃。林祖義看康庇禮先生,賴爾慈夫婦,白愛恩先生,馬克琳小姐,和幾個學生在一塊兒談話,他因為想練習英文,於是也走過去加入到他們的中間。他聽見一個學生指着草地上的一條牛向康庇禮說:

"That is a cattle."

康庇禮聽了向那個學生解釋道:

"cattle 這個字是「牛羣」的意思,它永遠是複數,就和那個當「人民」講的 people 是一樣。你可以說: That is a cow (母牛)。或者說: That is an ox (公牛)。但不能說: That is a cattle. 你可以說: There are many cattle here. 或者說: Cattle are feeding (吃草) in the pasture (草地)。』

這時坐在旁邊的 Miss McClain 聽到他們的談話,也嘴插說:

"Cattle are useful animals. Their flesh is very valuable as food, because it makes us strong. It is called beef, and tastes very good. Everybody likes to eat it."

•英文困學記•

"Cattle are raised in great numbers in North and South America." Mr. Bryan 這時也接上去說,"When they are old enough, they are killed, and their flesh is tinned and sent to all parts of the world."

Their skin is also useful. The skin is tanned and made into leather. This is afterwards dyed in different colours." Mr. Niles 也來加入他們的談話。

"I think you all know how useful leather is." Mrs. Niles 對坐在她身邊的許多學生說, "Your boots, shoes and a great many other things are made of it."

"Cow's milk is also a very valuable food. We drink it or use it a great deal in our food. Butter and cheese are made from it."康庇顧訊。

這時丁校長已經從鎮上買來許多肉包子,分給大家吃。 Mr. Bryan 的愛犬是隨主人一塊兒來的。 Mr. Bryan '將肉包子丟給他的愛犬吃;那狗把包子咬開,把裏面的肉餡兒吃了,外面的餅皮却抛了不吃。學生們看了都將頭吐舌,齊聲說那狗是平常吃好的吃慣了。林祖義心裏想:「那狗真是太奢侈了,牠比中國人還有福氣呢!中國人有幾個能吃得到牠平常所吃的那些好東西?』林祖義想到這裏就問康庇禮說:

『「奢侈」在英文裏是怎麽說的?』

"Luxury," 康庇證說。

"That dog is very luxury." 林祖義又說。

"No, that's not right." 康庇禮說, "Luxury is a noun. The adjective is luxurious. You have to say: That dog is very luxurious."

『關於 adjective, 我在文法書上是早已學過的了。我記得

書上把 adjective 分成六大種類:

- 1. Proper: chinese, English, American, French......
- 2. Descriptive: red, small, gentle, healthy.....
- 3. Quantitative: much, little. no, some, any, all......
- 4. Numeral:
 - (a) Definite:
 - (1) Cardinals: One, two, three, four, five......
 - (2) Ordinals: first, second, third, fourth, fifth......
 - (3) Multiplications: single, double, threefold, quadruple..........
 - (b) Indefinite: all, some, no, many, few, more, most, several, sundry......
- Demonstrative:
 - (a) Definite: The, this, that, these, those, yonder, the same, the other......
 - (b) Indefinite: A, an, any, one, certain, some, other, another.....
- 6. Distributive: Every, each, either, neither. 對於這六種分類我雖花了很大力氣去記它們,但有時仍然會忘記,不大容易完全記住。這且不說。我最認為苦惱的,是我自己覺得對於這各種 adjective 的性質,似乎並沒有徹底的認識,老是感覺到腦子裏的印象模糊不清楚。這不知道要應當怎樣才好。』

『道主要的原因是由於你書念得不多,你自己所讀過的關於 adjective 道一類的字太少的原故。你所學的那納氏文法第二冊是一本很淺近的書,裏面所舉的例子又不多,單點那幾個

淺顯的例句,那能使你澈底了解文法的全部呢?要想對文法有 更澈底的了解,一方面要多念讀本,一方面還要再念更詳盡的 文法。我記得關於形容詞的 Degrees of Comparison, 你也學 過一點,你現還記得嗎?』

『這我倒還記得一點。譬如:

E 100 1.41-1100 HER14	WH E DIE.	
Positive	Comparative	Superlative
(a) Small	smaller	smallest
Thick	thicker	thickest
Bold	bolder	boldest
Light	lighter	lightest
Short	shorter	shortest
Great	greater	greatest
Brief	briefer	briefest
Deep	deeper	deepest
Loud	louder	loudest
(b) Thin	thinner	thinnest
Fat	fatter	fattest
Hot	hotter	hottest
Fit	fitter	fittest
Big	bigger	biggest
Wet	wetter **	wettest
Sad	sadder	saddest
(c) Brave	braver	bravest
Wise	wiser	wisest
True	truer	truest
Large	1arger	largest
Fine	finer	finest

	White	whiter	whitest
	Tame	tamer	tamest
(d)	Нарру	happier	happiest
	Dry	drier	driest
	Merry	merrier	merriest
	Lazy	lazier	laziest
(e)	Gay	gayer	gayest
	Grey	greyer	/greyest
(f)	Good	better	best
	Bad, ill, evil	worse	worst
	Little	less	least
	Much	more	most
	Many	more	most
	Old	older, elder	oldest, eldest
	Late	later, latter	latest, last
	Fore	former	foremost, first
	Hind	hinder	hindmost
(g)	Fore	further	furthest
	Far	farther	farthest
	In	inner	innermost, or
			inmost
	Out	outer, utter	uttermost, or
			utmost
	Beneath	nether	nethermost
	Up	upper	uppermost
	這最後一項 (g) 類	中,最左邊的 Positive	e 一列是 adverb,
其餘 Comparative 和 Superlative 兩列是 adjective.』			
C	134)	• 3	を文 困 學 記・
_		_	

『在 adverb 之中,也有 Degrees of Comparison, 你也記得嗎?』康庇禮又問。

『adverb 當中的 Degrees of Comparison, 其形式差不多和 adjective 是一樣的 •

	Positive	Comparative	Superlative
(a)	Soon	sooner	soonest
	Long	longer	longest
	Loud	louder	loudest
	Late	later	latest or last
	Near	nearer	nearest
(b)	Well	better	best
	Ill or badly	worse	worst
	much	more	most
	Little	less	least
	Fore	further	furthest
	Far	farther	farthest
(c)	Wisely	more wisely	most wisely
	Beautifully	more beautifully	most beautifully
	這最後 (c) 項的	比較法 , 也和形容詞	當中的比較法是一
樣:			

Beautiful more beautiful most beautiful
Tremendous more tremendous most tremendous
Extraordinary more extraordinary most extraordinary
總而言之,adverb 裏各級比較的形式,差不多和 adjective 裏各級比較的形式是一樣的。』

『關於 adverb 的這一部分文法,你還能記得多少?』康 庇讀又問林祖義。

• 不歡而終的遠足被行 •

『adverb 除了形容 verb, adjective, 和其他的 adverb 而外,也可以形容 preposition 和 conjunction,還可以形容一個略句:

- (a) Adverbs qualifying prepositions:
 - 1. The bird flew exactly over the sleeper's head.
 - 2. He paid the money quite up to date.
 - 3. He was sitting almost outside the door.
 - 4. He arrived long before the time.
 - 5. The bird flew a little above his head.
- (b) Adverbs qualifying conjunctions:
 - 1. We stand now exactly as we were.
 - 2. A man is truly happy, only when he is in sour d health.
 - 3. I dislike this place, simply because the air is too hot.
 - 4. They locked the door, shortly before the thieves came.
 - 5. The watch was found, long after the thieves had been caught.
 - 6. I will do this, only if you promise to do that.
- (c) Adverbs qualifying sentences:
 - 1. Unfortunately the thief was not caught.
 - 2. Evidently he is much distressed at the news.
 - 3. Apparently he acted from some secret motive. 疏狀詞大概可以分為三類:
- I. Simple Adverbs.
 - (a) Time:—
 - 1. He did it before, and you have done it since.

- 2. He will soon be here.
- 3. He was taken ill yesterday.
- (b) Place: We must rest here, and not there.
- (c) Number: He did this once, but he will not do it again.
- (d) Manner, Quality, or State:---
 - 1. He did his work slowly, but surely.
 - 2. He acted thus.
 - 3. He behaved foolishty.
- (e) Quantity, Extent, or Degree:—

 He is almost, but not quite, the cleverest boy in the class.
- (f) Affirming or Denying:---
 - 1. He did not come after all.
 - 2. He will probably return today.
 - 3. We shall certainly succeed.
- I. Interrogative Adverbs:
 - (a) Time:---
 - 1. When did he come?
 - 2. How long will he remain here?
 - 3. How soon will he go?
 - (b) Place:---
 - 1. Where did he stop?
 - 2. Whence has he come?
 - 3. Whither is he going?
 - 4. How far did he go?
 - (c) Numder:--

- 1. How often did the dog bark?
- 2. How many persons came?
- (d) Manner, Quality. or State:---
 - 1. How did he do this?
 - 2. How is he to-day?
- (e) Quantity or Degree:——

 How far was that report true?
- (f) Cause or Reason:---
 - 1. Why did he do this?
 - 2. Wherefore did she weep?

III. Relative Adverbs

- (a) The antecedent understood.
 - 1. This is Where (= the place in which) we dwell:
 - Let me know when (=the time by which) you will come.
- (b) The antecedent expressed.
 - 1. This is the place where we dwell.
 - 2. Let me know the time when you will come.
- (c) 'The' as a Relative Adverb:
 - 1. The more wealth men have, the more they desire.
 - 2. The nearer the bone, the sweater the meat.
 - 3. The sooner he comes, the better for him.
 - 4. The stronger the ox is, the heavier weight it will carry.
 - 5. The more rain falls, the better it will be for the crops.

關於 abverb 構成的形式,我也學過一點,可是這時却有

點記不濟楚了。」

林淵義講到這裏時,那必在鄰近草地上的 Miss McClain 忽然高聲呼叫康庇禮,康庇禮聽見了,就站起來走過去。原來 Miss McClain 坐在那裏坐得時間太久,兩腿麻木,想站立總 站立不起來。康庇禮走到她面前,提住她的兩隻手臂把她從地 上拉起來。但是她兩腿發軟搖顫,站立不穩,不由得倒在康庇 禮身上,笑個不住。康庇禮扶住她的身體,過了好一會,她才 站穩了。林祖義看了這幕情景,不由得又觸動了自己的心事。 他想平時莫惠英對他躲躲閃閃的情形,好不掃與。她覺得:像 西洋人這種男女社交公開,才眞是社交公開哩!男女隨便談笑 ,隨便拉手,毫無拘束。中國社會裏的一般時髦人物雖也高唱 着男女社交公開,但事實上是一點也做不到的。中國的男女社 交就和中國舊式婦女繼就了的一雙小脚一樣,是再放也放不大 的了。他想着,不由得就轉眼去尋找莫惠英的蹤影。他用目光 四處搜尋了好一會,才發現莫惠英、孫重美、劉恆育、高鴻才 四人坐在湖邊談話,彼此間的態度,似乎顯得非常親密。他見 了這種情形,不由得更加氣惱。近日以來,他早就注意到高鴻 才和莫惠英間的關係了。他看高鴻才時常找莫惠英說話,而且 莫惠英拒絕高鴻才的態度並不如拒絕他自己那樣嚴厲。這其中 的原因,他也曾再四思維,可是始終沒有找到一個解答。高鴻 才的嘴邊和雙頰長滿了髭鬚,也不時常修剃。論起面貌來,他 認為高鴻才實在沒有他自己漂亮。若再論到家庭,那他比高鴻 才可就更加富有了。姓林的是本縣大族,他家是世代書香。在 前清的就候,姓林的舉人翰林也不知道出了多少哪!但是那莫 惠英為什麽偏偏會喜歡高鴻才呢?惟一可能的原因,無非是由 於高鴻才比他自己的英文好。就歷次考試的成績說,高鸿才總 是在他之上的。再就在班上的答問而言,有時他自己同答不出

來的問題,高鴻才總往往可以囘答得出來。也許就是因為這個原故,莫惠英就看上了高鴻才了能!因而他想,如果要爭囘莫惠英的心,恐怕還得在英文上下工夫。他這樣想着,不由得就站了起來,走向莫惠英那邊去。他走到他們身邊,說道:

『你們都在說些什麼呀?說得這樣津津有味!』

『我們正在這裏研究英文呢!』高鴻才轉過險來向他說。 『莫小姐剛才告訴我們,要想英文好,須得隨時隨地用英文來描寫所看見的景物。譬如「微風吹總了湖水」這句話,若用英文說,就得用 ripple 這個字: A breeze rippled the waters of the lake.』

『剛才我和康先生也在那裏研究英文哩! 我們會討論到形容詞和疏狀詞的用法。』林祖義說着,就乘勢擠到他們中間去坐下來。

『形容詞中間的 Comparison 和 Articles 是相當難用的,』 莫惠英說。『Articles 在中文叫做冠詞,就是 a, an, the 三個字。在納氏文法是歸入 Demonstrative Adjectives 裏面的。 普通在比較級字的後面都是用 than, 譬如:

You are taller than I.

This stick is longer than that.

不過有幾個語尾是 or 的比較級的字,像 superior, inferior. anterior, posterior, senior, junior 等,後面不能用 than. 須得用 to. 譬如:

- 1. His knowledge of English is superior to yours.
- 2. This article is inferior to that.
- 3. That event is anterior to this.
- 4. Mr. Chang is senior to Mr. Li. 像這些字的用法,有些人很容易弄錯呢!』

『還有,二人或二物相比較時用 Comparative, 但若一人或一物與數人或數物相比較時,就要用 Superlative,』孫重美說。『譬如:

- 1. The prettier girl is the more clever of the two.
- 2. The prettiest girl is the most clever of the three. 還有一次,我聽見有一個學生說過:

Mr. Campbell is taller than any teacher in our school. 其實這句話是說錯了。 any teacher in our school 是把 Mr. Campbell 自己都包含在內了,難道他自己還會比自己高嗎? 所以這句話應該改為:

- 1. Mr. Campbell is taller than any other teacher in our school.
- 2. Mr. Campbell is taller than anyone else in our school.
- 3. Mr. Campbell is the tallest of all our teachers. 像這些用法,也很不容易弄清楚呢!』

『我記得還有些有絕對性的形容詞,是根本不能有比較法的。像 straight, round, dead, unique, square, perfect, absolute, infinite 等字就是這樣。』劉恆育接下去說。『譬如,我們就不能說:

This line is straighter than that.

This circle is rounder than that.

因為值和圓都是有絕對性的;要值就是值,要不值就是不值; 要圓就是圓,要不圓就是不圓。不能說那週是比較地圓,或那 個是比較地值。除非不是填正值和圓的東西才能加以比較。 譬如:

This orange is more nearly round than that.

· 不歡而終的遠足族行。

其餘像 dead, absolute 那些字,當然更不能用比較法了。』

『以上所講的都是不同等的人或物的相較法 ,用的都是 than 這個字。』高鴻才也插嘴說 ●『如果是同等的人或物相較 時,就要用 as 了。

- 1. You are as tall as I.
- 2. She is as pretty as her sister.
- 3. That man is as poor as a beggar.

如果是否定的話,就要用 so.....as

- 1. She is not so pretty as her sister.
- 2. You are not so tall as I.
- 3. That man is not so poor as a beggar.

在否定的句子裏,有時也仍然可以用 as......as, 不過不甚普通罷了。』

『用疏狀詞來形容 Comparison 中的各級形容詞,也是一件繁難的事,』林祖義也就自己所知道的發表出了意見。『positive級的字,可用 very來形容; Comparative級的字,可用 much來形容;至於 Superlative級的字,則須用 much在 the 之前,用 very在 the 之後,來形容官。

She is very pretty.

She is much prettier than her sister.

^a She is much the prettiest girl in our school.

" She is the very prettiest girl in our school.

關於 article 的用法,似乎是格外繁難。甚麼時候應當用 article,甚麼時候不應當用 article,不知道莫小姐能不能告訴 我們一個簡單容易記住的原則?』林祖義問莫惠英。

『文法這個東西,若單譯原則,是最空洞,最難明白,最 雖記憶的。』莫惠英說。『我的意思,學文法最好是多看例句

- ,多在讀本裏注意詞和語的用法,利用歸納的方法,來了解文 法中的各種定義和原則。只要我們例句看多了,書讀多了,我 們自己自然會歸納出一種定義和原則的概念來。我們只要能對 英文自由運用無誤,就算達到我們學習文法的目的了。我們又 不想成為專門的文法學家,對於文法的原則和定義就是不能夠 明確無誤地說出來,又有什麼關係呢?關於 article 的用法, 如果單說原則,是非常空洞難明白的。我不如將用 article 和 不用 article 的字句多舉出一些例子來,你仔細比較研究一番 ,自己自然就可以歸納出一個原則的概念來了。
 - 1. Man is mortal.
 - 2. The man is coming to me,
 - 3. Woman is easily moved than man.
 - 4. The woman is very pretty.
 - 5. Dogs are faithful animals.
 - 6. The dogs are barking at me.
 - 7. Cats catch mice.
 - 8. The cat does not catch mice.
 - 9. Washington was a great man.
 - 10. Dr. Sun Yat-sen was the Washington of China.
 - 11. New York is the economic center of the world.
 - 12. Shanghai is the New York of China.
 - 13. I worship Edison.
 - 14. He wishes to become an Edison.
 - 15. I studied in Nanking University.
 - 16. I studied in the University of Nanking.
 - 17. Water is an important element.
 - 18. The water of the river is fresh.

- 19. The box is made of wood.
- 20. The wood of which the box is made is very bad.
- 21. I am fond of wine.
- 22. The wine of Shansi Province is very famous.
- 23. Gold is precious.
- 24. The gold of that mine is not very pure.
- 25. He likes beef.
- 26. The beef they had at dinner was not good.
- 27. Honesty is the best policy.
- 28. The honesty of Washington is well known.
- 29. Happiness cannot be bought with money.
- 30. The rich envy the happiness of the poor.
- 31. Justice is a virtue.
- 32. The justice of that man is remarkable.
- 33. Industry is the mother of success.
- 34. The industry of the workinan pleased his employer 其實像這種例子是很多的,不過我現在只想出來這一點罷了。』 莫惠英說到這裏就暫時停住不說了。

『此外還有些簡短的成語 , 有的在名詞的前面是須要加article 的 , 有的在名詞的前面是不能加article 的 , 』高鴻才 君莫惠英住了口 , 就自己接過來說 。 『譬如: in the night, in a hurry, in a word, at a loss, as a rule, for a while, to have an eye to, to put an end to 等等 , 都是用 article 的 o 還有像 at night, at table, at school, by boat, by train, before bed, to go to bed, to go to church, to go to school, to go to market, to go to hospital, to put into prison, to take place, to make room, to set sail, to take root, to cast anchor, to give ear, to

keep house 等等,都是不要用 article 的。』

高鴻才剛說到這裏,湖岸那邊忽然起了一陣怪叫的聲音, 接着,四處的學生都飛奔地跑了過去。林祖義等為好奇心所騙 使,也一弯走去看看。原來有個學生涉水到湖裏去捉魚,一個 不小心,落到深水裏去了。那學生游泳術不精,到了深水裏身 體早已不由他自主,不一會,頭頂就消失在波浪中,但見一股 股氣泡,從水底下直泛上來。在旁觀看的學生們慌了手脚,大 家一齊亂叫起來,但是誰也不敢下水去掇救。這時康庇禮看見 了, 趕快脫去衣服, 撥開衆人, 蹤身跳到湖裏去, 不多一會工 去,就把那學生拉上岸來了。幸虧落水的時間不久,經過一番 人工呼吸和使其叶水的工作以後,那學生也就醒轉過來。這時 全體師生都很感謝康庇禮,一齊證美他見義勇為的精神。康庇 禮只穿了一條短襯褲,身體幾乎完全赤露在外面。這時雖說是 暮春,有些人也還身穿夾衣,但康庇禮却毫無怕冷的意思。他 那么身肥肝而多毛的肌肉在冶蕩的春風中充分地顯得結實和堅 **韌。當他用自己的襯衫揩拭着身體的時候,許多學生都圍住他** 觀看,好像對他那健壯的身體,存有無窮的欽美。這時林和義 忽聽站在旁邊的莫惠英向孫重美說:

『你看康庇禮先生,身體那樣強健,性情那樣溫柔,眞是 一位理想的男性!』

大概是因為林祖義覺得莫惠英的話說得太肉麻了,他忍不住噗嗤一聲笑了出來,引得旁邊的高鴻才和劉恆育也都掩口笑個不止。莫惠英被笑得不好意思,頓時紅了臉,就把頭轉過去了。

丁校長看在這旅行的當兒幾乎鬧出一條人命來,不由得十分懊惱。他立刻命學生們整好了隊伍,開始囘校。那落水的學生不能行走,於是就在鎮上借了一張軟床,將他放在床上

,由其餘的學生們輸流抬着他 ,一直把他抬到學校 。 於是這一次春假期中的遠足旅行 , 就在大家不歡的空氣中 , 告了結 束。

XI. 英文演說會

這年的秋天,日縣城內又開到許多軍隊。本來又是要駐啓 慧中學的,經了丁校長多方的奔走和交涉,結果才得免駐。可 是城內的一般居民,却反而因此遭殃了。軍隊旣無學校可駐, 只好來駐民房。普通一般老百姓那裏敢和軍隊論什麼是非,大 家還不是忍氣吞聲,任其所為罷了。林祖義的家也是被駐之一 。這事不但使林祖義氣惱憤恨,而且也很影響他讀書的效率。 他平常是自己一個人住在前層的三間書齋裏,地方寬敞安靜, 很能讓他安心讀書。但軍隊就是因為看他家裏地方寬大,所以 硬要住進去,強迫林祖義把三間書齋讓出來。林祖義無力反抗 ,自己只好搬到後層,和父母住在一塊;於是前層的三間書齋 裏就住上了一連兵士。

這幾天來,林祖義正忙於預備一篇英文演說稿子。原來學校裏有個 English Club,是由中學部裏一般愛好英文的學生們所組織的。這個 club 每星期開會一次,由會員們輪流演講或辯論。最近這會裏改選職員,莫惠英當選為會長,高鴻才當選為副會長。這事對於林祖義又是一種無形的激刺。他眼看別人都很出風頭,而他自己却從沒有得到一個出風頭的問會,他似乎覺得很抱饱。而且他看高鴻才和莫惠英接近的機會愈過愈多,這如何能使他安心呢?恰巧這次輪到他演講,他想:『我總得借此機會,出點風頭了!』於是他決心好好預備一番,打算在演講的時候一鳴驚人,好替自己爭囘來一點面子。但是講什麼題目呢?他自己想了好幾天,也沒有一個主意。最後他跑去和康庇顧商議,康庇禮說:

『在英文文法之中\動詞那部分是比較最繁雜的。我看你 不如借此機會,將你從前所學過的關於動詞的那部分文法,從 頭淸理一番,作一篇有系統的演講。這不但對於聽演講的人有益,就是對於你自己,也很有益哩!』

林祖義覺得康庇藍的話說得有理,於是就把他自己所有的 幾本文法書和自己所作的幾本筆記都找出來,打算從新整理一 逼,好好作一篇演講稿子。但不幸這幾天却遇到家裏駐兵,使 他不能安心工作。這天早晨,他好容易設法穩定了自己一顆紊 飢的心,拿起筆來,翻開書籍和筆記,正想構思寫下去,忽然 聽得前面院子裏起了一陣擾嚷的聲音。他趕快放下筆,跑到前 院去一看,但見幾個兵士正在拳脚交加,毆打他的父親。他走 上前去,一面勸解兵士,一面將他的父親拉到後院來,問明了 原由,才知道是這麼一囘拿:有幾個兵士,要在院子中心,擺 一個土坑,當做厕所。他父親林廷清根據衞生上的理由,竭力 加以勸阻,不料却因此觸了兵士們的怒,大家鬨然圍上來,一 齊毆打他。及至林祖義走來,將他拉到後院去的時候,他額角 上已被打靑了一塊,鼻孔也流出血來了。林祖義將他扶到床上 躺下,拿溫水給他洗了臉,安慰他說:

『爸爸,你不要動氣。自古來,「秀才遇了兵,有理說不 清。」被兵打了就和被狗咬了是一樣,只怪自己是沒有小心罷 了。以後無論丘八們做甚麼,我們且一概裝與做啞,由他們 去罷!』

林祖義將他父親安慰了一番以後,自己的心緒却反而紊亂 起來。他回到座位上,拿着筆呆了半晌,一個字也寫不出。最 後,他决意到學校的圖書室裏去工作。他抱了書筆,來到學校 的圖書室裏,先閉目鏡靜了一會心緒,然後開始寫道:

動詞大概可以分成三類, 就是: 1. Transitive; 2. Intransitive; 3. Auxiliary.

Transitive Verb 的例子:

(148)

He likes pictures.

The hunter killed a tiger.

Intransitive Verb 的例子:

Birds fly.

men sleep.

Auxiliary Verb 的例子:

He will come.

I have studied the book.

有時同是一個動詞,可以當 Transitive Verb 用,也可以當 Intransitive Verb 用:

Intransitive

The thief stole into my house. It moves on very fast.

We return to our house.

Our school opens at nine o'clock.

Transitive

The thief stole my clothes. I move away the stone.

He returned the book to me.

I open the windows of the room.

有時—個 Transitive Verb 可以有兩個 object, —個叫做 direct object, —個叫做 indirect object.

- 1. I can refuse you nothing.
- 2. He asked me a question.
- 3. I promised him my help.
- 4. He teaches us English.

在上面這四句裏, nothing, question, help, English 都是 direct object; you, me, him, us 都是 indirect object.

Intransitive Verb 可以分成兩種:一種是 Complete Intransitive Verb:

- 1. The sun shines.
- •英文演說會•

- 2: Horses run.
- 3. All men sleep.
- 4. The boy laughs.

還有一種是 Incomplete Intransitive Verb, 須要有一個 Complement 來補充它的意思:

- 1. He is a merchant.
- 2. He has become rich.
- 3. This proved a big mistake.
- 4. He grew impatient.

這四句裏面的 merchant, rich, mistake, impatient 都是 complements.

在 Intransitive Verb 後面的 Complement 是補充 Subject 的,所以又叫做 Subjective Complement. 像上面四句裏面的 例子都是屬於這一類。還有在 Transitive Verb 後面的 Complement 都是補充 Object 的,所以又叫做 Objective Complement. 例如:

- 1. They made him king.
- 2. I found the man asleep.
- 3. They thought the boy foolish.
- 4. He put the engine out of order.

這四句裏面的 king, asleep, foolish, out of order 都是 objective complements.

動詞中除了上面三種分類而外 , 還有四個重要的問題:

1. Mood; 2. Number and Person; 3. Tense; 4. Voice. Mood 可以分為四種:前三種叫做 Finite moods, 後一種:

Mood 可以分為四種:即二種叫做 Finite moods,後一種叫為 Infinitive mood.

I. The three Finite moods:---

- 1. Indicative
- 2. Imperative
- 3 Subjunctive
- II. The Infinitive mood.

關於 Number and Person 一層,有一個原則,就是 verb 和 subject 必須始終一致。

- 1. If the subject is Singular, the verb must be Singular.
- 2. If the subject is Plural, the verb must be Plural.
- 3. If the subject is in the First person, the verb must be in the First person.
- 4. If the subject is in the Second person, the verb must be in the Second person.
- If the subject is in the Third person, the verb must be in the Third person.

Tense 可以分成這樣十二種:

	* 10 11-E DIC * 1	
	Non-Progressive	Progressive
Present	I do.	I am doing
Past	I did.	I was doing
Future	I shall do.	I shall be doing
Present Perfect	I have done.	I have been doing
Past Perfect	I had done.	I had been doing
Future Perfect	I shall have done.	I shall have been doing.
關於 Voice:	: A Transitive ve	rb has two voices, the
Active and the	Passive. 這兩種 vo	ices 的替變是這樣的:

Form:——{a. A does B. (The Active Voice) b. B is done by A. (The Passive Voice) 關於這兩種 voices 替變的情形,可以看下面的這許多質

• 英文演說會•

(151)

例:		
Boys like	pictures. (Prese	nt Tense)
1. Pictures	are liked by boys.	
He visite	d me yesterday.	(Past Tense)
I was visi	ited by him yesterday	7
He will	d me yesterday. ited by him yesterday. visit me to-morrow. visited by him to-mo	(Future Tense)
I shall be	visited by him to-mo	orrow.
The cat	has caught a rat. s been caught by the c	(PresentPerfect)
A rat has	s been caught by the c	eat.
5 The cat	had caught a rat. d been caught by the	(Past Perfect)
A rat ha	d been caught by the	cat.
He will	have written the	composition before you
6. Tretur	rn. (Future Perio	ect <i>)</i> an awittan hu him hefore
I ne con	return.	composition before you ect) en written by him before
(He is wr	iting a letter. (Pr	ogressive Present)
7. $\left\{\begin{array}{c} A \text{ letter} \end{array}\right.$	iting a letter. (Priss being written by hi	m.
(He was	writing a letter. (Progressive Past)
8. $\left\{ A \text{ letter} \right\}$	is being written by hi writing a letter. (was being written by	him.
	Indicative Mood (i	直陳語氣)
	I. Active Ve	
	Present Ten	ise
	Singular	Plural
1st Person		We love
2nd Person		
3rd Person	He loves	They love
(152)		•英文困學配•

Past	Tense

	Singular	Plural
1st Person	I loved	We loved
2nd Person	You loved	You loved
3rd Person	He loved	They loved
	Future Tense	
	Singular	Plural
1st Person	I shall love	We shall love
2nd Person	You will love	You will love
3rd Person	He will love	They will love
	II. Passive Voice	
	Present Tense	
	Singular	Plural
1st Person	I am loved	We are loved
2nd Person	you are loved	You are loved
3rd Person	He is loved	They are loved
1	Past Tense	
	Singular	Plural
1st Person	I was loved	We were loved
2nd Person	You were loved	You were loved
3rd Person	He was loved	They were loved
	Future Tense	
	Singular	Plural
1st Person	I shall be loved	We shall be loved
2nd Person	You will be loved	You will be loved
3rd Person	He will be loved	Théy will be loved

和 Second Person.

- 1. Keep still.
- 2. Be quiet.
- 3. Don't be idle.
- 4. Never mind.
- 5. Let me tell you one thing.
- 6. Don't let me disturb you.

Subjunctive Mood:—

Finite verb "love":---

Present Tense Singular

1st Person	If I love	If we love
2nd Person	If you love	If you love
3rd Person	If he love (or loves)	If they love
	Past Tense	
	Singular	Plural
1st Person	If I loved	If we loved
2nd Person	If you loved	If you loved
3rd Person	If he loved	If they loved
	Future Tense	
	Singular	Plural
1st Person	If I should love	If we should love
2nd Person	If you should love	If you should love
3rd Person	If he should love	If they should love-
	The verb "to be":-	
Present Tense		
	Singular	Plural
(154)		• 英 文 困 學 配•

Plural

1st	Person	If I be (or am)	If we be (or are)
2nd	Person	If you be (or are)	If you be (or are)
3rd	Person	If he be (or is)	If they be (or are)
		Past Tense	•
		Singular	Plural
1st	Person	If I were	If we were
2nd	Person	If you were	If you were
3rd	Person	If he were	If they were
		Future Tense	
		Singular	Plural
1st	Person	If I-should be	If we should be
2nd	Person	If you should be	If you should be
3rd	Person	If he should be	If they should be

The Forms of Infinitives

n	Active		Passive
	Non-Progressive	Progressive	
Simple	To do	To be doing	To be done
Perfect	To have done	To have been doing	To have been done

The Kinds of Infinitives

I. The Noun-Infinitives

- (a) Subject to a verb:----
 - 1. To err is human; to forgive is divine.
 - 2. To die is the common lot of man.
 - (b) Object to a Transitive verb:---
 - 1. They expect to succeed.

- 2. A good man does not fear to die.
- (c) Complement to Auxiliary, Intransitive, or Facti-
 - 1. I did go. I should go. I may go.
 - 2. He appears to be a wise man.
 - 3. We considered him to be the best in the class.

II. The Qualifying Infinitive:-

- (a) After a verb:
 - 1. He came to see the sport.
 - 2. The book was sent to be given as a prize.
- (b) After a noun:----
 - 1. We have no water to drink.
 - 2. Give him a chair to sit on.
- (c) After an adjective:
 - 1. He is quick to hear and slow to speak.
 - I was sorry to hear such bad news.Omission of "to."
- 1. I saw him enter the room.
- 2. I heard her tell him that she had nothing to eat.
- 3. I felt some one pull me by the sleeve.
- 4. He bade the man row close to a rock.
- 5. I had him make this test of his skill.
- 6. I make the children laugh.
- 7. Let me know what you are thinking of.
- 8. We watched him go and come.
- 9. We beheld the fish rise.
- 10. I have known him laugh for nothing.

- 11. You need not send those books to me-
- 12. I dare not do this in open day.
- 13. He shall go.
- 14. I can (or could) go.
- 15. I should go.
- 16. I must go.
- 17. I may (or might) go.
- 18. I will (or would) go.
- 19. I do (or did) go.

Participles or Verbal Adjectives

Present Participle	Past Participle
doing	done
writing	written
finding	found
singing	sung

- I. The Participle retains some attributes of a verb:
 - 1. The boy wearing a cap is my little brother.
 - 2. The door being open, I walked in.
 - 3. Smiling brightly, he extended his hand.
 - 4. Having finished his work he went home.
- II. The Participle as Adjective-Equivalent.
 - 1. The man standing at the door is my brother.
 - 2. This is a novel written by Dickens.
 - 3. Singing birds are scarce here.
 - 4. He is a wounded soldier.

Gerunds or Verbal Nouns

I. The Gerund as a noun:——

- 1. Sleeping is necessary to life. (subject to a verb)
- 2. He enjoyed sleeping in the open air. (object to a verb)
- 3. The best kind of rest is sleeping. (Complement to a verb)
- 4. He was fond of sleeping. (object to a preposition)

II. The Gerund as a verb:---

- 1. I am certain of seeing him to-day. (governing the object "him")
- 2. Shooting song-birds is forbidden. (governing the object "song-birds")
- 3. He was pleased at having won a prize. (governing the object "prize")
- 4. The horse is in the habit of pawing the ground. (governing the object ground)

林祖義將演講稿子的綱要作好了以後,就拿去給康庇證看 · 康庇禮看了很滿意,就對他說:

『關於動詞文法的網要,大概就是這種情形,你演講的時候,就拿這個網要作根據好了。此外,我不妨再把我自己所想到的東西講一點給你聽,算作一種補充材料。我在中國教了數十年的英文,根據我這數十年的經驗,我深知道在文法上有許多地方是你們中國學生特別容易弄錯的。就以動詞而言,這動詞幾乎是任何英文句子中所不可缺少的一部份,可是你們中國學生寫英文時,常常就會句子裏沒有動詞。固然,動詞有時也可以省略,但省略得要是地方,是時機,不是可以隨隨便便省略的。譬如下面這幾句裏就是把動詞省略了的:

- 1. He is strong, his brother weak.
- 2. Some come early, others late.
- 3. When young, he suffered many hardships.
- 4. He lost it while walking in the park.
- 5. If possible, please bring it to me to-morrow. 假如把上面五句裏的關詞都補足起來,應當是這樣的:
 - 1. He is strong, his brother (is) weak.
 - 2. Some come early, others (come) late.
 - 3. When (he was) young, he suffered many, hardships.
 - 4. He lost it while (he was) walking in the park.
 - 5. If (it is) possible, please bring it to me to-morrow.

關於 Auxiliary verb, 你們中國學生也很容易弄錯。譬如下面這幾句話,你可知道錯在什麼地方?

- 1. A telegram being sent from the battlefield told their father to be seriously ill.
- 2. I didn't feel to be so intoxicated (醉) then.
- 3. His name became to be known by everyone.

林祖義想了一會沒有想出來,康庇證馬上又接下去說:

『這三句話都錯在、(to be) 上頭。第一句裏那個 being 是多餘的。 sent 已經是 past participle, 形容 telegram, 為什麼還要 being 呢?在 their 前面 , 應當用 that 那個 conjunction, 把全句劃分成兩個 clause, 意思就比較清楚了。 father 後面的 to be 應當改成 was:

1. A telegram sent from the battlefield told them that their father was seriously ill.

第二句裏的 to be 完全是多餘的,把 to be 去了,就成為一個很好的句子了。

- 2. I didn't feel so intoxicated then. 第三句有兩種說法:
 - 3. His name became known to everyone.
 - O His name came to be known by everyone.

如果要用 became 這個字,就不能用 to be, 而且 by 要改成 to 。如果一定要用 to be 和 by 兩個詞語 , 就要把 became 改為 came。』

『關於這些 auxiliary verbs, 在我所做的網要中只略為 提到,講得不詳細,不如請你在這方面多給我補充一點吧!』 林祖義向康庇顧要求說。

『還有 do 這個字,它可以當 auxiliary verb 用,也可以當 principal verb 用。並且有時在一句之中,同時可以有兩個 do, 一個是 auxiliary verb, 一個是 principal verb, 這是須要特別注意的。』康庇禮說。『譬如下面這兩句話裏就是因為只有 anxiliary verb 的 do, 而沒有 principal verb 的 do, 所以發生了錯誤:

- 1. If yau don't so, you will fail.
- 2. I didn't my lesson.

若將上面的每句裏面,再加入一個 principal verb 的 do, 就沒有錯誤了:

- 1. If you don't do so, you will fail.
- 2. I didn't do my_lesson.

不可將 do 和 be 相混用。下面兩句中的錯誤都是將應當用 do 的地方,錯用了 be:

1. Vapor is not turn to clouds but freezes directly (160) ◆ 文 因 单 記・

into snow.

- 2. Soap is not dissole in a solution of salt. 將上面兩句中的 is 都改為 does, 就沒有錯了:
 - Vapor does not turn to clouds but freezes directly into snow.
- 2. Soap does not dissolve in a solution of salt. do 這個字有時還可以用來代替前面已經說過的動詞:
 - 1. I came when he did.
 - 2. I like it better than he does.
 - 3. He works just as hard as 1 do.

第一句裏的 did 代替了 came; 第二句裏的 does 代替了 likes; 第三句裏的 do 代替了 work. 若將 do 都改成前面所已經提過的動詞,文氣上就顯得重複了:

- 1. I came when he came.
- 2. I like it better than he like it.
- 3. He works just as hard as I work.

還有助動詞中的 shall 和 will, 你知道它們的區別嗎?』康庇 禮問林祖義說。

『如果說: I shall, you will, he will, 這是表示 simple future time 。 如果說 I will, 意思是 「我願意」;如果說 you shall, he shall, 意思就是「你應當」, 「他應當」了。 』 林祖義說。

『你說的對了 ,』 康庇禮說 。 『The rules given for 'shall' and 'will' should be followed for 'should' and 'would.' 'Should' is also used in all persons to express obligation.

Example: I (we, you,he, they) should study hard.

In clauses stating a condition, 'should' is used in all persons.

Example: If I (we, you, he, they) should be late, the others would be greatly inconvenienced. In clauses that express a willingness, 'would' is used in all persons.

Example: If I (we, you, he, they) would pay for it, the others would be pleased.

'would' is also used in all persons to express customary action.

Example: I (we, you, he, they) would often gaze at it for hours.

關於 shall, will, should, would 這些字的用法, 現在都該明白了吧!』康庇禮向林祖義說。

『還有 must 那個助動詞,和 have to 的意思是不是完全一樣呢?』林祖義又問。

『用在 affirmative (肯定)的時候, must 同 have to 的意思是很近似的;不過若用在 negative (否定),意思就不相同了。且看這兩句:

- I. He said that I must not do it.
- 2. He said that I did not have to do it.

前一句的意思是: He said that I should not do it. 或者是: He said that it was wrong for me to do it. 後一句的意思是: He said that it was unnecessary for me to do it.

『還有那 have to 的過去時 had to, 和 must we 的 意思是完全不同的。且看下面這一句就明白了:

He must have had a doctor to examine it, but he was too poor to do so.

這句話的錯處,就是在把應當用 had to 的地方 ,用了must have 。 若將這句話譯為中文 , 就可以看出意思上的矛盾來了:

「他一定是請了醫生看過 ,但是他因為太窮了却做**不**到。」

若將 must have 改為 had to, 意思就不致於矛盾了:

He had to consult a doctor, but he was too poor to do so. (他應當請醫生看,但是他因爲太窮了却做不到。)

如果一定要用 must have 這個詞語,話就得這樣說:

He must have had a doctor treat the cut, for it has healed very quickly (他一定是請醫生治過了傷口,不然不會好得這麽快。)

將 have to 當作 must 的意思用的時候,在 have 和 to的中間不能再加入別的字。

- 1. We had, however, to study hard.
- 2. We had sometimes to eat rotten eggs. 這兩句話應當改為這樣說:
 - 1. However, we had to study hard.
 - 2. Sometimes we had to eat rotten eggs.

假如把 have 和 to 分開 , 有時就完全失去了 must 的意思:

Sometimes we had rotten eggs, and nothing else, to eat.

若將 must, have to, should 這三個字比較起來, must 的意 多本文 造 最 會 (163) 思最強,have to 次之, should 比較弱。 在動詞方面,關於這一類微妙的問題還很多,不過你演講的時間是有限的,補充多了你也講不完,現在暫且就補充這一點,下次有機會我再和你慢慢說吧!』

林和義將康庇禮所補充的材料整理了一番,插進自己先前 所作的網票專去,果然覺得自己的演說稿子又比較富麗得多了 • 他每天努力預備着演講的事,打算到開會的那天好受台顯一 下身手。但不料這幾天來學校又鬧着一件排外的事情,凡是和 外國人有密切關係的事都在被排之列,英文會既不能例外,當 然也被排得幾乎不能存在了。原來有一部分學生,不知道是從 那裏得來的暗示,忽然奮起了一陣異乎尋當的愛國的勢情。他 們認為:凡是到中國來的外國人都是帝國主義侵略中國的先鋒 **殴**,都是對於中國有害的,都是應當排斥的。第一應當先打倒 的是教會,因為教會傳播外國的洋教,麻醉中國的人心。在一 個細雨漴漴的早晨,林丽義正打着傘走向學校去,經過教堂的 時候,忽然看迎面峰擁來一陣學生,手拿木棍,跑進教堂,就 把門窗等物打得粉碎。林韶義打着傘,站在細雨中看了好半天 ,等那陣學生呼號着走去了以後,他才離開。事後他聽說教會 上人十和一般外國人也會開會討論過這事,可是議决的結果並 沒有向外界發表。學校裏一般平常愛好讀英文的人現在也受人 歧視了。啓慧中學裏的英文錯點比起別的中學來特別多。別的 中學每星期不過有五小時或六小時的英文,而啓蒙中學每星期 却有十小時至十二小時的英文。這件事早已成為一般反對者攻 聚的口售了。自經這個排外風潮發生後,一般主持茲文會的人 都消聲匿跡,不敢再露頭角。到了照例要開英文會的這天,林 **祖義看那英文會的佈告板上却贴了一張學生會的佈告,說是今** 天上午在公共體育場開軍民聯歡大會,叫學生們自動去參加。

林祖義覺得橫豎今天是不會上課的了,他於是就信步走到公共 體育場去看看。他來到體育場時會已開了半天,他見他所認識 的幾個學生會的幹事正在台上演講。他來到台下,看左邊所站 的都是他學校裏的學生,右邊所站的都是軍隊。他無意間一抬 頭,却看見上次毆打他父親的那幾個兵士正站在離他不遠的地 方。他和他們面對面,彼此漠漠然互相看了幾眼。他在台下站 了不久,天就正午了。他忽然覺得肚皮有點發餓,於是也不等 散會,就自己悄悄購了會場,走囘家去。他一進門,就聞到 由院中新掘的那個廁所裏傳來一陣陣的惡臭。他掩鼻趕快走過 ,來到後層房子,看他父母已經在那裏吃飯。他父親林廷清一 見他就說:

『今天你何以囘來得這樣遲? 我們等你吃飯,等了好久也不見你囘來,所以自己就先吃了。』

『今天學校停課,同學們都到公共體育場去開軍民聯歡大 會去了。我跑到會場上去看看,無意間却看見上次打你的那幾 個兵十也在那裏呢!』林祖義說着,就拿起碗來盛飯。

『唔?』他父親聽見了,在喉嚨裏咕嚕一聲,也就不再說 -什麼。

於是大家一齊默默地吃飯。

XII. 訪問的眞意

有一個時期,林祖義的母親固執主張要替林祖義訂婚,使 林祖義終日陷在煩惱的網裏。 日縣雖說是個鄉僻小地方,但 近年來風氣也漸漸開通,父母替兒女主持婚事,也要向兒女本 人徵詢意見,不像從前那樣專制了。但是林祖義母親向林祖義 所提議的幾個女子,林祖義一概都不同意。有幾個女子只有像 片可看,可是林祖義說單看像片是不能决定的。還有幾個女子 連像片都沒有,那更不足以供研究了。林祖義的意思,起碼要 是他自己親眼看過的女子,才有和他議婚的資格。不過他自己 看過的女子是很有限的,除了啓慧中學的女同學而外,他那裏 看過別的女子呢?因為此事,他母親曾和他爭論過許多次。最 初,這事本來是他自己的煩惱,但到了後來,却漸漸變成他母 親的煩惱了。有一天,他母親忽然露出了堅毅的態度,向他 說:

『來議婚的人家很多,有些我都認為是門戶很相當的,但是你却這也不同意,那也不同意。你自己到底打什麼主意,不妨坦白地說出來!我也快六十歲了,近來身體又時常鬧病,自覺也恐不能久於人世。但我在死去以前,總要親限看你結了婚,死後才能瞑目。所以無論如何,在今年之內,一定要替你訂完婚。你說一定要你自己親眼看過的女子,這也由你!現在世道改了,男女都自由了,我還能固執古證嗎?你不妨把你所認識的心愛的人說出來,我就請媒人到他家去求婚。人兒不妨由你自己揀,但是今年一定要訂婚,這是我的主張,我也非堅持不可!』

林祖錢本來的意思,是不願意現在訂婚的。他說他要在高 中畢業以後才訂婚,大學畢業以後才結婚。但是他母親不願意 ,一定要替他現在訂婚,高中畢業就結婚。因此母子之間,常 起爭執。不過現在林祖義看他母親對於訂婚一層這樣堅决地主 張,同時又答應說人兒可以由他自己揀,他的心意,不自覺地 就漸漸軟化下來了。

『只要你能答應我自己選擇對象,我也能答應你現在就訂 婚。』林祖義終於沈吟着說。『我有一個同班的女同學,姓莫 名叫莫惠英,學問很好,人品也不錯,我很愛……喜歡她,我 想……』林祖義好像有無限的想說而說不出的話。

『其實在我的本意,是很不願意和姓莫的這樣的人家結親的,因為他們是吃洋教的人,和我們的志趣很不相投,』林祖義的母親說。『不過現在世道改了,男女都自由了,我也做不了你的主。也能,爽性都由你自己去能。我現在就託個媒人,到姓莫的家裏去說說看。可是事情的成與不成。我是一點都沒有把握啊!』

林祖義的父母在一塊兒商議了一會,結果就拜託了劉恆育的父親和姜亮友的父親做媒人,到莫家去議婚。姜家和莫家有一點親戚關係;劉恆育的父親是数會裏的一位長老,和莫惠英的父親莫牧師是極要好的友朋。林祖義的父母認為託這兩個人去說合是最適當不過的了。

媒人拜託過以後,隔了好幾個星期,也不見有囘信。這時 林祖義不由得比他的母親還更加着急起來。在學校裏,他由冀 惠英的態度上,已經看出來莫惠英是早已得知這個消息了。近 來莫惠英對他更加躲避得厲利:眼一點都不敢向他看,只要見 他走近,就趕快躲到別處去了。其他的男同學也都好像從劉恆 育和姜亮友那裏得到一點消息似的,常常三五個聚在一塊切切 私語,或望着林祖義的臉笑個不住,但林祖義只裝作一切不知 道。在林祖義的內心,他是非常感到不安和發急的,因為他覺 得,無論莫家答應或不答應,劉姜兩個媒人,總該有個回信才 對。老是這樣不長不短,一點回音都沒有,到底是什麼原故呢 ?

最後,林祖義决意親自到劉姜兩家去訪問一次,藉以探聽 消息。這天,他來到劉恆育家裏,劉恆育的父親劉長老一見他 就嚷着說:

『哦哦,你來得正好,我正要到府上去呢!上次令尊大人 記我的事情,我已經進行過了。我第一次和莫牧師談到的時候 ,他說他要向他女兒徵詢了意見以後,才能答覆我。後來我又 見到他,問他和他女兒商議的結果怎麼樣,他說,他女兒的意思,認為自己現在年紀太輕,還不是談婚姻問題的時候,須得 過個三兩年以後,才能談到這問題。看他們父女兩人的意思, 倒並不是對於世兄不滿意呢。我本來早該到府上去囘信的,只 是因為這幾天教會上有點事,很忙,老是沒有閒空,今天你來 得與是好極了…….』

『我今天來,是找劉恆育—同研究英文的,』林祖義趕忙 辯解着說。『你所說的那些事,完全是我父母做的主,我自己並不清楚。下次你幾時得空,請你到舍間和我父母說去好了。』

『啾啾,原來是這樣嗎?那也好……』劉長老似乎很失望 地說。『不過今天劉恆育不在家,他到學校裏去開英文會去了 。英文會新近才恢復,今天第一次開會,你怎麼沒有去參加呢 ?』

『我因為要預備考試的功課,很忙,沒有得空去參加,我 以為劉恆育也沒有去參加哩!却沒料到他不在家。不過那也沒 有關係,他不在家,就請老伯指教罷。老伯不是燕京大學畢業 的嗎?聽說老伯英文好得很哪!我因為遺失了一部分關於文法 的筆記, 想請老伯給我補一點。 那就是關於 Preposition 和 conjunction 的兩部分。』

『年輕時候所學的東西,現在早已都忘盡了。你如果實在要問我,我也得要臨時查書呢!』劉長老說着,就到書架上去拿過幾本書來,翻開查看。他查了一會,忽然指着一個地方向林祖義說:『你看,這些完全是 prepositions 。』

林祖義聽了, 趕快拿出紙筆,將劉長老所指的地方抄錄下來:

Prepositions

aboard	but(=except)	past
about	by	pending
above	concerning	regarding
across	considering	respecting
after	desp te	round
against	down	save, saving
. along	during	since
amid, amidst	ere	through
among, amongst	except, excepting	throughout
around	for	to, unto
at	from	touching
athwart	in	toward, towards
barring	inside	under
before	into	underneath
behind	notwithstanding	until, till
below	of	up
beneath	off	upon
beside, besides	on	with

between, betwixt outside within beyond over without, etc.

林祖義抄完了以後,劉長老又翻到另外—個地方,指着向 林祖義說:

『Preposition 的內容,大概可以分成兩大種: 一種是Preposition,一種是Preposition-Phrases. 這些Preposition Phrases 也是很常用很要緊的。』

林祖義聽罷又把那些 Preposition-Phrases 抄下來:
Preposition-Phrases

•	~	
according to	as to	by virtue of
along with	because of	by way of
apart from	by dint of	for the sake of
as for	by means of	in accordance with
as regards	by reason of	in addition to
in case of	in preference to	over against
in compliance with	in regard to	owing to.
in consequence of	in spite of	round about
in consideration of	inside of	thanks to
in front of	instead of	with reference to
in lieu of	on account of	with regard to
in opposition to	out of	with respect to
in place of	outside of	etc.

林祖義將 Preposition-Phrases 抄完了以後,又問劉長老 說:

『 關於 Preposition 的這部分文法,有什麼應當特別注意的地方沒有?』

『關於 Preposition 的 object, 是很值得注意的。 普通 (170) · 实 文 困 學 記 ·

都認為, preposition 的 objet, 一定是 noun 或 Pronoun o 但不知道有時別的東西也可以用來做 preposition 的 object o 譬如,關於 Time 和 Place 的 adverb, 是可以用來做 Preposition 的 object 的 o

- 1. He has worked hard from then to now.
- 2. We walked about from here to there.
- 3. Until now it has not ceased raining.
- 4. We must be ready by then.
- 5. You must go at once.
- 6. This will last for ever.

除了 adverb 以外,還有 phrase, 也可以做 preposition: 的 object o

- 1. He has come from beyond the seas.
- 2. He did not return till about ten days afterwards. 除了 adverb 和 phrase 以外,還有 noun-clause,有時 也可以拿來做 preposition 的 object o
 - 1. This depends upon whether he will consent or not.
 - 2. He told every one of what he had heard.
 - 3. Go whenever you like except that you must not go in the rain.

有時偶而 preposition 的 object 還可以省略:

- 1. The man we were looking for is here. (the man whom we were looking for is here.)
- 2. I have a chair to sit on. (I have a chair to sit on it.)

在文法中, Preposition 是很難的一部分 , 因為從許多· 勸 問 的 虽 意· (171)

prepositions 裏,歸納不出什麼能蓋括全體的原則來。必須個別地將每個 preposition 都研究明白,認識清楚,然後對於它們才會運用。』劉長老最後好像是要特別提醒林祖義似地說。

『關於 Preposition 的情形, 我大概是知道了。 還有 conjunction 是怎樣呢? 也請老伯講—講吧!』 林祖義又請求說。

劉長老又將書翻了一會,翻到一個地方,指着書向林祖義 說:

『Conjunction 大略可以分成兩大種:一種是 Co-ordinate Conjunctions, 是聯結句中同等的詞語的;還有一種是 Subordinate Conjunctions, 是聯結主要子句和附屬子句的。這兩種聯結詞的定義,你不妨把它們抄下來。』

,林祖義於是把 Co-ordinate Conjunction 和 Subordinate Conjunction 的定義抄下來:

A Co-ordinate Conjunction connects words or groups of words that are of equal rank in the sentence.

A Subordinate Conjunction connects a subordinate clause with a principal clause.

林淵義把定義抄完了以後,劉長老又說:

『書上所舉的這許多 Conjunction 的例子,你也可以抄下去。』

林 祖 義 於 是 又 把 那 些 例 子 抄 下 來 :

Co-ordinate Conjunctions:

and both.....and

or at once.....and

but not only.....but also

.nor either.....or

(172)

•英文因學即••

for neither.....nor

therefore as well as while no less than

etc. etc.

Subordinate Conjunctions

because as.....as that so.....as when so.....that if as.....so

as whether.....or
unless so far as
lest as if
since in case
than now that
though for fear

although in order that
provided provided that
whether as much as
before as soon as
after so long as
until no less than
etc.

林祖義將兩種 Conjunctions 秒完了以後,劉長老又指着 書裏的例句對他說:

『這些例句,你也可以選一點重要的抄下去。』 林祖義於是又選抄了一些例句:

Co-ordinate Conjunctions

• 訪問的真意•

- 1. We sang and they danced.
- 2. He is sad, but hopeful.
- 3. Is he innocent or is he guilty?
- 4. & I am not rich, nor do I wish to be.
- 5. He will die some day; for all men are mortal.
- 6. This book is both interesting and instructive.
- The Prime minister was at once detested and despised.
- 8. He was not only accused but also convicted.
- 9. Either this man sinned or his parents.
- 10. He was neither an idler nor a gambler.

Subordinate Conjunctions

- 1. He will succeed, because he works hard.
- 2. John is taller than his brother.
- 3. You may come just as you are; don't dress.
- 4. when he comes, tell him to wait.
- 5. He raised his hand that the bus might stop.
- 6. I shall not go unless the weather is fine.
- 7. He is quite as clever as his brother.
- 8. She is not so pretty as her sister.
- 9. It is so hot that I cannot sleep.
- 10. as we sow, so shall we reap.
- 11. You must do it whether you like it or not.
- 12. So far as I can see, he cannot be more than thirty.
- 13. He spoke loud as if we were deaf.
- 14. In case we fail, we must try again.

- 15. Now that you have finished your task, you are free to go and play.
- 16. He wrote down the number, for fear he should forget it.

林祖義將 Conjunction 的例句抄完了,又向劉長老說:

『關於 Conjunction 的情形 , 我也大概都明白了。文法中最末的一項 , 是 Interjections, 老伯也可以講一點給我聽嗎 ? 』

『嚴格地說起來,威嘆詞是不能算做品詞之一的。』劉長老說。『因為威嘆詞在文句中和別的字並沒有文法上的關係,不過只是一種驚嘆的聲音罷了。威嘆詞的形式有兩種,一種是單字,一種是 phrase 。』 劉長老說到這裏, 又將書翻到 Interjection 的地方,叫林祖義把重要的地方抄下去。

- I. Simple Interjections
 - 1. Joy---Hurrah!
 - 2. Grief--oh! ah! alas!
 - 3. Amusement-Ha! ha!
 - 4. Approval---Bravo!
 - 5. Weariness-Heigh-ho!
 - 6. Attention-Lo! Hark! Hush!
 - 7. Reproof—Fie! fie!
 - 8. Contempt—Stuff! Bosh! Tut-tut! Pooh! Pish! Pshaw!
 - 9. Doubt-Hum! Hem! Humph!
 - 10. To call some one-Halloo! Halloa! Ho!
- II. Phrase Interjections
 - 1. Ah me! woe is me!

- 2. For shame! (=alas, on account of shame!)
- 3. alack a day! (=Ah, lack or loss on the day!)
- 4. Hail, all hail! (=Be hale or healthy!)
- 5. Good-bye! (=God be with ye!)
- 6. Bad luck to it!
- 7. O dear me!
- 8. Good gracious!
- 9. Good heavens!
- 10. Well done!

林祖義將這些 Interjections 抄完了以後,又和劉長老談了一會關於學校裏最近的各種情形,就鮮別了出來。他出了劉長老的家,一直就走向姜亮友的家裏去。他心裏想:『單是聽了劉長老一面之鮮是不夠的,總還得從姜亮友父親的口裏,探聽一點消息。』他到了姜亮友的家裏,姜亮友的父親一見他就說:

『我早就猜着你一定是很發急的了!你今天來,我正好藉 此機會和你談談吧!』

『老伯,你說的是什麼呀?我一點也聽不明白你的意思!』 《林祖義裝着莫名其妙的樣子說。

『 就是上次令尊大人託我的那件事,』 姜老頭兒瞇縫着 限,望着林祖義的臉只是發笑。『我已經和莫師牧談了好幾次了,他對於世兄本人,倒很欽佩呢!不過他說,現在男女的婚姻,多半是由本人自己作主了,所以他不能替他女兒作肯定的答覆。這是一層。還有一層呢,他說他們的家庭是信奉基督教的,而你們的家庭並不信奉基督教。他們教會上的規矩,教內的人是不大願意和教外的人結婚的。因為一家之內,如果信仰不同,感情就不容易融洽。假如你也能信奉基督教的話呢,那

麼,這事將來也許有可以成功的希望。你同家後,不妨再和你 父親仔細商量商量看。』

『這些事我完全不知道,這完全是我父母主動的啊!我沒 有與趣談論這些事情。我今天來,是來找亮友兄研究英文的。 』林祖義趕快把研究英文的事提出來,把婚姻的事撇開完全不 談。

『亮友,他今天到學校去開英文會去了。你今天怎麼沒有 到學校去開會呢?』姜老頭兒懷疑似地問他。

『因為月考快到了,我在家裏忙着預備考試的功課哩!我 以為亮友兄此刻該散會囘來了,却料不到今天散會這樣遲!旣 然亮友兄還未囘來,我也不多耽擱了,爽性下次再來吧!』林 和義說罷,就起身要告辥囘去。

誰知正在這時,姜亮友却回來了。姜亮友—見林祖義就說 ·

『祖義兄,你今天不去參加開會,實在太可惜了!今天是 莫惠英演講,她講的是關於 Preposition 的用法。也不知她 是從那裏搜集來的那許多材料,填豐富哪!當她講的時候,我 們把重要的地方都筆記下來了。她講過以後,康庇禮先生和和 馬克琳小姐都很稱讚她呢!』姜亮友說着,就從書包裏把筆記 本拿出來,打開了遞給林祖義看,並指着對林祖義說:

『age 這個字,前面可以用幾種不同的 preposition哩!

at the age of three (三歲時)

at an early age (年輕時)

at that age (在那個年紀)

in that age (在那個時代)

in his old age (他老年時)

to come (or become) of age (達成丁之年)

• 訪問的真意•

(177)

```
boys of the same age (同年歲之兒童)
   infirm with age (因年老而衰弱)
   dotage caused by age (老邁龍鐘)
   being behind the age (時代落伍)
   during the middle ages (中古時代)
   for many ages (世世)
   from age to age (代代)
   through all ages (自古以來)
year 這個字,若當作「年齡」的意思用時,前面也多半用 in o
   in his third year (他三年級時)
   advanced in years (年老)
   in his declining years (在他衰齡時)
   in the early (or earlier) years of his life (在他年
     輕的時候)
此外,凡論到年齡時,差不多都有一定的說法,方括號內的字
是表示可以省略的:
   in his younger days (在他年輕時)
   during his childhood (在他童年時)
   in his youth (在他年輕時)
   during the years of his youth (在他年輕時)
   throughout his life (他終身)
   since his childhood days (自他童年時)
   children from eleven to twelve [ sears old ] ( +-=
     歲的兒童)
   children cf eleven or twelve [ years ] (十一二歲的兒
     (治
說到年齡,若用 when-clauses,有許多字都是可以省略的。
                               • 英文因學記•
  (178)
```

下面方括號裏面的字都是表示可以略去的:

whin [he was] three [years old]

when [he was] a youth

when [he was] young

when [he is] cld

when [he grew] older

上面的例子都是關於年齡一方面,還有關於時間一方面的話器 ,多半是這樣說法:

- 1. It is ten o'c'ock. (十點鐘)
- 2. He came at ten o'c'ock. (他十點鐘來)
- 3. It is ten minutes to six. (五點五十分)
- 4. It is half past eight. (八點半)
- 5. It is about ten o'clock. (大約是十點鐘)
- 6. He came about ten o'clock. (他大約是十點鐘來)
- 7. I get up at six o'clock. (我六點起身)
- 8. It started snowing at five o'clock in the morning. (早晨五點鐘起開始下雪。)
- 9. at that hour I am usually sound asleep. (那時我總是熟睡。)
- 10. at those hours the doctor does not see patients. (那些時候醫生是不看病人的。)
- 11: I finished it in two hours. (我兩小時內完成它) 在 time 這個字前面,有時不用 preposition,有時用 at,有時用 in, 還有時用 on:
 - this time, last time, next time, some time, sometimes, a long time,

- at that time, at such a time, at one time, at other times, at all times, at some time, at the present time, at the same time.
- 3. in the meantime (在其期間)
 in olden times, in those times,
 in time (合時;不遲;來得及;趕得上)
- 4. on time (準時;不遲)

關於 part of a day, 就是一天之内的一部分時間, 多半用 at, 有的時候也用 in 。

- at dawn, at daybreak, at sunrise, at noon, at night, at midnig t, at twilight, at dusk, at sunset,
- in the twi ight, in the dusk,
 in the morning, in the afternoon,
 in the evening,
- 3. early in the morning 假如說話的意思,着重在 day, 而不着重在 part of the day, 那麼就要用 on, 不能用 at 或 in 了。

on a co'd winter morning, on a certain evening,

on afternooms,

on winter nights, on monday evening,

碧 one day 而言的時候;多半用 on:

1. on the last day of the term, we had a class meeting.

(wrong: In the last day of the term, we had

a class meeting.)

2. I am happiest on Saturdays.

(wrong: I am happiest in Saturdays.)

3. He was born on January 20, 1946.

(wrong: He was born in January 20, 1946.) 在 yesterday, today, tomorrow 這些字的前面,是不需要 加 on 的。

1. He came yesterday.

(wrong: He came on yesterday.)

2. He will come tomorrow morning.

(wrong: He will come on tomorrow morning.) 談到 two or more days 的時候,就要用 in,或用 during • 但意思若着重在 separate days 的時候,也可以用 on.

- In thos: days my father was working in a government o fice.
- 2. In those days I lived in Shanghai.
- During my primary school days, I had a pleasant time.
- 4. He came on Saturday and again on Sunday.
- 5. On those two days I was not at home. 說到 week, 通常是用 in, 或用 during, 不能用 cn 。 不過 week 若是用來形容別的字時,不在此例。
 - 1. I study only three days in a week.
 - 2. During examination week, I have to st. dy hard.
- 3. On week days I study, but I rest on Sundays. 說到 month, season, year, 通常也都是用 in 。除非是說到某月,某季,某年中的一天時,才可以用 on 。

- 1. We entered this school in July.
- 2. I left middle school in spring.
- 3. In my fifth year, I studied hard.
- 4. In that year we lived together.
- 5. He was born in 1946.
- 6. He was born in January 1946.
- 7. He was born on January 20, 1946.
- 8. On a summer day I went swimming with my friends.

在 morning, afternoon, evening, week, season, month, year 這些字前面,如果用了形容詞像 this, that, one, last, previous, next, tomorrow, yesterday 等等,則前面的 preposition 是可以省去的。下面所舉的都是這類的例子:

1. in the morning 1. {
 this morning, yesterday morning, the previous morning, tomorrow morning, the next morning, the next morning,
 that afternoon, one afternoon, yesterday afternoon, the previous afternoon, tomorrow afternoon, the next afternoon
 this evening, yesterday evening,

(182)

• 英文图學配•

- evening 3. the previous evening, tomorro v evening, the next evening last Saturday,
- 4. On Saturday 4. the previous Saturday, the next Saturday
- 5. in the week, the previous week, next week, the next week
- the previous summer,

 next summer,

 the next summer

 last summer

r this summer,

- 7. in the month, last month, the previous month, the next month, the next month
 - this year,
 last year,
 the previous year,
 next year,
 - One morning, he woke up to find the money gone.
 (wrong: In one morning, he woke up to find

the money gone.)

- He will come tomorrow afternoon.
 (wrong: He will come in tomorrow afternoon.)
- 3. He gave it to me yesterday evening.

 (wrong: He gave it to me in yesterday evening.)
- It happened last Saturday.
 (wrong: It happened on last Saturday.)
- 5. We studied it the previous week.

 (wrong: We studied it in the previous week.)
- 6. I shall play with you this summer.(wrong: I shall play with you in this summer.)
- 7. Come to me the next month.

 (wrong: Come to me in the next month.)
- 8. He studied English last year.

(Wrong: He studied English in last year.)

莫惠英所講的還很多呢,我所抄錄的不過是一點要緊的罷了。 』姜亮友把筆記念完了以後,就去替林祖義泡上一杯茶來。

『我想把你的筆記借囘去抄一抄,行不行?』林祖義問姜 亮友說。

『那裏有不行的呢,你拿回去好了。』姜亮友說。『現在午飯快好了,就在舍間用便飯罷。』

『不用客氣,我得趕快囘家,還要預備別的功課呢!』林 和義說着,就辭別了出來。

林祖義囘到家裏時,他家裏的人都在吃飯了。他父親問他 從那裏囘來得這樣遲,他就把經過的情形說了一遍。

『看莫牧師的意思,倒很想叫我們全家都隨他們信基督教 哩!』林祖義坐下來,一邊吃飯,一邊說。『可是我若拿出良

(184)

心來說,我對基督教就很難發生信仰。據聖經上說,人是上帝 造的,可是我就要問,上帝又是誰造的呢?』

『上帝是人造的!』林廷清趕快接着他兒子的話說了一句 ,引得大家都笑了起來。

『你們不要笑,我並不是在說笑話,我說的是正經話呀! 』林廷涛沈下脸色來說。『現在人們所說的上帝,都是人類自 己腦筋中所想像出來的。有人認為上帝是一位具體的神,北有 人認為上帝是一個支配宇宙的抽象的原則。可是無論怎麽說, 現在人們所認為的上帝,總逃不出人類腦筋想像力的範圍以外 去。這樣看來,上帝不就是人造的麼?……宇宙間是不是眞有 一個主宰,這問題實在是太難以想像了!即使是真有一位主宰 的話,這位主宰的性格究竟是怎樣,恐怕也很難結得出來吧! 聖經上說,人類是上帝的子孫。在這一點上,人類很有點自大 的嫌疑。世俗上的人常常好對別人誇耀自己的門第,說自己的 和先做過什麽大官,出過什麼偉人。這也難怪人類要自居為字 宙之主宰的子孫了。在地球上,人類是萬物之靈,但在別的是 球上,會不會有比人類更聰明的動物呢?這問題現在是無法囘 答的。再渦幾十萬年以後,如果科學發達到能使人類在星球間 自由旅行了,也許人類對這問題能有比較圓滿的答覆。.......環 有,聖經上常常提到人類的「罪」,也就是英文中的 sin o 但 究竟 sin 是怎麼—囘事?人類爲什麼會有 sin? 這是宗教問題呢

林廷清自己—個人滔滔地說個不止,但別人都只顧吃飯,沒有—個人答理他。他看別人對他所說的話並不發生與趣,他、自己說了一會,也就不說了。

XIII. 別離的悲哀

『你哭什麼?你不是說過要跟我到美國去留學的嗎?我先 回去,好替你預備住所,選擇學校呀!等你一邊初中畢業,我 馬上就到中國來接你一同到美國去。到那時我們就可以永遠聚 在一塊了!現在不過是個短期間的別離,有什麼值得這樣悲傷 的?』賴師母說完了話,她臉上的眼淚也已經揩乾,隨即停住 不哭了。

『你說的話是真的嗎?』莫惠英好像有點懷疑似地問,也 用手背揩着眼淚。

『怎麼不是真的呢!我不是老早就和你說過這樣的話了嗎?我也不是現在才說出來騙你的!』賴師母說。

『我不久就初中畢業了,這樣的英文程度,可以到美國去 留學嗎?』 莫惠英說時已經停住不哭,室內其餘的人也都露出 了笑容。

『一般普通初中畢業生的英文程度是不夠到美國去留學的 ,可是我覺得你的英文程度比一般普通的初中畢業生高得很多 ,是可以到美國去留學的了。』賴師母說。 『我恐怕你對於我的英文程度有點估價過高了罷!』 莫思. 英說。『前時你給我的那本英文小說,我拿囘去看不到幾頁就. 丟開不看了。我覺得書上滿紙都是生字,而且有些沒有生字的 地方也看不懂。我對於我自己的英文程度很沒有自信心呢!』

『你沒有自信心嗎?』賴師母也笑着說。『我現在不妨就 舉行一個考試,看看你的英文程度究竟怎樣。普通的英文文法 書都將語文分成八大種類,按類去研究它們。這是站在語文的 立場來研究語文的。我們若換個立場,以學習語文的人做本位 ,來看英文文法,則你們中國人對於英文所感覺到的難和易, 和我們英美人所感覺到的難和易,一定是很不相同。你現在不 妨以你自己學習英文的經驗做根據,把中國人學習英文時所應 當特別注意的地方,所認為是重要和難明白的地方,從頭敍述 一遍,不必照文法書上那種品詞的分類和次序。』

莫惠英聽了這話,先低頭稍稍想一想,然後抬起頭來聚精 會神地說。

『我覺得中國人學英文第一先要明白英文句子的構造。不明白句子的構造就不能明白句子的意思。英文句子的基本形式包含兩個主要的部分: Subject 和 Predicate 。

Subject Predicate

1. War is cruel.

2. We should love peace.

Subject 和 Predicate 如果都沒有別的字去形容它們,就叫做 Simple Subject 和 Simple Predicate 。

Simple Subject	Simple Predicate
Boys	play.
They	have gone.
A dog	is running.
	Simple Subject Boys They A dog

•別離的悲哀•

(187)

4. The man was walking.
Subject 和 Predicate 如果都有別的字去形容它們,就叫做
Complete Subject 和 Complete Predicate .o

Complete Subject

Complete Predicate

- 1. Good students
- study hard.
- 2. The boys in the garden are playing happily.
- 3. Some little girls are running in the park.
- 4. The shepherd of my village comes back with a dog. 假如在一句中同時有幾個 subjects 或幾個 predicates, 中間是用 conjunctions 連接起來的,這些 subjects 和 p.ed cates 就叫做 compound subjects 和 compound predicates.

Compound Subject Simple Predicate

- 1. Trees and flowers grow in the garden.
 - Simple Subject Compound Predicate
- 2. I shall stay and wait for you.

 Compound Subject Compound Predicate
- 3. my brother and I will go out and play.

Subject 和 Predicate 是構成 sentence 的成分。把 Subject 和 Predicate 弄清楚了以後, 就應當明瞭 phrase 的性質, clause 的種類,和 sentence 的種類了。我還記得文法書上是這樣說: a phrase is a group of connected words to express a thought, but it does not contain a subject and a predicate. It is used as a part of a sentence only. A phrase which begins with a preposition is called a prepositional phrase; as, in the house. When a prepositional phrase is used as an adjective to modify a noun or a pronoun, it is called an adjective phrase.

- 1. The boy in the garden is playing.
- 2. I found him in great trouble.

When a prepositional phrase is used as an adverb to modify a verb, an adjective or another adverb, it is called an adverbia phrase.

- 1. He comes in a hurry. (modifies the verb comes)
- 2. She is lazy in her work. (modifies the adjective lazy)
- We left Shanghai early in the morning. (modifies the adverb early)

A cause is a group of words which form a part of a sentence and has a subject and a predicate. It is a sentence within a sentence. 在一句中的幾個 clause, 如果能彼此獨立,互不依賴,這種 clauses 叫做 Co-ordinate Clauses o 譬如:

Subject Predicate Subject Predicate
He came to see me, but I was not at home.
這句話裏 but 前後的兩個 clauses 都是 Co-ordinate Clauses。如果在一句之中,有的 clause 是要依靠别的 clause 來完成其意義的,這種 clause 就叫做 Subordinate clause,那個.
被依靠的 clause 就叫做 Principal clause 。

Subject Predicate Subject Predicate

- 1. He stays where he is.
- 2. You are the man who talked to me. 這兩句裏 He stays 和 You are the man 都是 Principal clauses, 因為它們說明句中主要的意思。但是 where he i 和 who talked to me 都是依靠 Principal clause 來完成它們

.的意思的,所以叫做 Subordinate clauses 。以上所說的是依 · Clause 的重要性來分類的。外此還可以按 Clause的性能分成 Adjective clause, adverb clause, 和 noun clause. An adjective clause usually begins with the words, who, which, whom, that, what, when, etc.

- 1, Men who are honest never lie.
- 2. This was the boy whom I saw.
- 3. I heard the story that you told her.

The clause who are honest is used as an adjective to tell something about men; whom I saw, about boy; that you told her, about story. An adverbial clause usually begins with such words as when, while, where, before, etc.

- 1. The bride appears when the bell rings.
- 2. They will go where you bring them.
- 3. The train had left before we reached the station.

 A noun clause can be used as the subject or the object of a sentence.
 - 1. What you say is true. (subject)
 - 2. I eat what you eat. (object)

Sentences 可以依其構造之繁簡分為 (1.) Simple Sentence, (2.) Compound Sentence, 和 (3.) Complex Sentence o A simple sentence contains only one subject and one predicate either or both of which may be compound.

	Subject	Predicate
1.	The boy	runs.
2.	The boy and the girl	run.
3.	The boy	runs and jumps.

(190)

4. The boy and the girl run and jump.

A compound sentence contains two or more principal clauses, which are also called co-ordinate clauses, for each clause is independent. They are usually joined by conjunctions.

One clause Conjunction Another clause

- 1. It is late and everybody is going home.
- 2. He came to see me but I was not at home.
- 3. The voice was sweet and the feet was white.

A complex sentence contains two or more clauses, at least one of which is a subordinate or dependent clause.

- He bought some fairy chalk which made his voice soft.
- 2. He also went to the baker who sold him some dough. 還有把 sentences 分為:
 - (1.) Declarative, (2.) Interrogative,
 - (3.) Imperative, (4.) exclamatory o
 - 1. She had a ind grandmother. (Declarative)
 - 2. Where are you going so early? (Interrogative)
 - 3. Don't speak so load. (Imperative)
 - 4. What a pity! (exclamatory)

不過這種分類法是按照文句意思的性質分的,不是按照文句的組織和構造而分的。在我的意思,中國人學英文,還是多注意文句的組織和構造較為有益。』莫惠英滔滔地說了半晌,似乎 壁帶有點疲倦了,於是她就暫住了口,從事休息。

『把 sentence 的構造弄明白了以後,其次所應當馬上就 幹明白的又是什麼呢?』賴師母和她的丈夫賴爾慈一同整理着

行李,口裏這樣地問。

『其次所應當馬上就弄明白的就是 Intransitive Verb 和 Transitive Verb 。』 莫惠英又繼續往下說。『動詞是英文句子中的基幹, Intransitive Verb 和 Transitive Verb 是動詞中的兩大綱目。不把動詞弄清楚,英文句子也是看不懂的。動詞中像 fly, sleep, go, come, run, walk, lie, bark 等都是 intransitive verbs, 因為它們都不 take an object 。

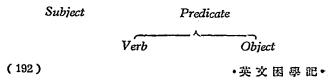
	Subject	Predicate		Subject	Predicate
1.	The dog	barks.	4.	Birds	fly.
2.	The man	sleeps.	5.	They	go.
3	This girl	walks.	6.	We	run.

An intransitive verb may be modified by an adverb, an adverbial phrase or an adverbial clause.

Subject

Predicate

- 1. The children are sitting quietly (adverb)
- 2. That woman will go now. (adverb)
 - 3. The sick boy lies on his bed. (adverbial phrase)
 - 4. The servant walks behind the car. (adverbial ph ase)
 - 5. They worked till he came. (adverbial clause)
- 6. The train left before we arrived. (adverbial clause) A verb that does not take an object is called an intransitive verb. A verb that takes an object is called a transitive verb. The object of a transitive verb is a noun or pronoun or a group of words that is used as a noun.



- 1. The hunter kills a fox. (noun)
- 2. My classmates help me. (pronoun)
- 3. I know how to do it. (phrase)
- 4. He loses what he brings with him.

Transitive Verb 研究清楚了以後,就要研究它的 object 了。有時一個 transitive verb 可以有兩個 objects 。 —個叫做 Direct object, —個叫做 Indirect object 。 Some Transitive verbs take two objects after them, one of which is usually the name of some thing, and the other of some person or animal. The thing named is called the Direct Object; the person or animal named is called the Indirect Cbject.

- 1. He brings that book (direct) to me. (indirect)
- 2. They gave a prize (direct) to the boy. (indirect) Sometimes the indirect object is placed before the direct object, in that case the preposition is omitted.
 - 1. He brings me (indirect) that book. (direct)
 - 2. They gave the boy (indirect) a prize. (direct)

一個 sentence 可以分成兩大部份: Subject 和 Predicate o 在 Predicate 之中,最主要的是一個 Verb o 如果這個 Verb 是 Transitive Verb 的話,還要有 Object o此外, 句子中 還有一種叫做 Complement (補充語)的 o 有時一個 Intransitive verb 並不能完成一個意思,譬如說, I am, 這是毫無 意義的 o 一定要加上別的字來補充 Predicate 裏的意思,像 I am a man, 然後全句的意思才算完全 o When an Intransitive verb takes a complement to complete the meaning of the sentence, it is used to modify or relate to the subject.

So it is called the Subjective Complement. Subject Predicate

	Suvject			_
	Intra	nsitive Verb	Con	iplement
1.	You	are	a boy.	(noun)
2.	The man	becomes	a teacl	her. (noun)
3.	They	are	studen	ts. (noun)
4.	The poor	man becomes	a thief	(noun)
5.	The children	feel	happy.	(adjective)
6.	These flowers	smell	good.	(adjective)
7.	The dog	is	mad.	(adjective)
8.	This song	seems	good	(adjective)
bjective Complements may be expressed in eight different				

Sub forms:—

	Subject	Pred cat :	
	Intr	ansitive Verb	Complement
1.	A cow	is	an animal. (noun)
2.	The dog	went	mad. (adjective)
3.	The man	appears	tired. (participle)
4.	My fatner	is	here. (adverb)
5.	The house	is	to let. (infinitive)
6.	It	is	I. (pronoun)
7.	That book	proved	of great use. (phrase)
8.	This	is	what he said. (clause)
After su	uch verbs as ta	iste, look, a	appear, prove, sound,
etc, wh	en an adjective	e is used, i	t modifies the subject
and is	a subjective co	mplement; v	vhen an adverb is used,

it modifies the verb. Thus,

- The apple tastes sour. (adjective)
 I taste it carefully. (adverb)
- The boy looks happy. (adjective)
 He looks at it carefully. (adverb)
- 3. He appears honest. (adjective)
 He appears promptly. (adverb)
- 4. It sounds strange. (adjective)
 The bell sounds sweetly. (adverb)

Most Transitive verbs make a complete sense after the object has been expressed and do not require 'any other words to be added to complete the meaning. Some Transitive verbs do require some other words to be added to complete the meaning of the sentence. The additional word or words which are used to complete the predicate of a transitive verb are called the objective complement. Objective Complements may be expressed in eight different forms:—

Subject	Predicate		
	Transitiv Verb	oe Object	Complement
1. They	elected	him	president. (noun)
2. The judge	sets	them	free. (adjective)
3. We	find	the boy	asleep. (adverb)
4. His father	wants	him	to go. (infinitive)
5. The girl	sees	him comin	g. (present participle)
6. This work	makes	me	tired. (past participle)
*別離的悲	宴•	,	(195)

- 7. This plot filled us all with terror. (phrase)
- 8. We have made him what he is. (clause)

把英文句子裏面的 subject, predicate, intransitive verb, transitive verb, direct object, indirect object, subjective complement, objective complement 都研究清楚了以後,對於英文句子的構造總算大概都可以明白了。必須先對句子的構造有了徹底的了解,然後才能對句子裏所發表的意思有徹底的了解。』莫惠英說到這裏時,賴爾慈趕忙去倒上一杯茶來,遞給莫惠英。莫惠英於是喝着茶休息。

『組成 sentence 的分子,除了上述各種以外,在你看還有什麼重要的東西?』坐在人業裏的康庇禮趁莫惠英喝茶的當兒問她說。

『在英文 sentence 的裏面,除了上述各種分子而外,我認為還有三樣很常用的東西,也是很重要的。』莫惠英喝完了茶叉接下去說。『這三樣重要的東西就是 Infinitive, Participle, Gerund. An Infinitive is a verb form which may be used as a noun, an adjective or an adverb. When an infinitive is used as a noun, it can be the subject, the object or the complement to a verb. Thus:

- 1. To die is the common lot of man. (subject)
- 2. To study is our duty. (subject)
- 3. He wants to come. (object)
- 4. They like to play. (object)
- 5. He seems to work hard. (complement)
- 6. They appear to be wise. (complement)

When an infinitive is used as an adjective, it modifies the noun that usually goes before it. Thus,

- 1. I have a house to let. (modifies house)
- 2. They have some water to drink. (modifies water) When an Infinitive is used as an adverb, it modifies a verb, an adjective or anothor adverb. Thus:
 - 1. He came to see the game. (modifies the verb 'came')
 - 2. He wept to know that news. (modifies the verb 'wept')
 - 3. He is quick to learn. (modifies the adjective 'quick')
 - 4. It is hard to sing. (modifies the adjective 'hard')
 - 5. He is always here to help us. (modifies the adverb 'here')
 - He works hard to get the prize. (modifies the adverb 'hard')

The word 'to' is usually the sign of an infinitive, but after the verbs let, make, see, bid, help, watch, hear, feel, need, behold, know and dare not, an infinitive is used without the word 'to.'

- 1. I let him do it. (to do)
- 2. He made me come. (to come)
- 3. They bid him go. (to go)
- 4. I hear her sing. (to sing)
- 5. We need not wait. (to wait)
- 6. I feel the house shake. (to shake)
- 7. She watches him play. (to play)

- 8. They help her study. (to study)
- 9. We behold the sun rise. (to rise)
- 10. I have seen him weep. (to weep)
- 11. He dares not say this. (to say)

A Participle is a double part of speech. It can be used as a part of a verb or as an adjective.

- 1. The sun is rising. (part of a verb)
- 2. I see the rising sun. (adjective)
- 3. The rose has faded. (part of a verb)
- 4. He threw away the faded rose. (adjective) There are two kinds of participles, the present and the past participles.

Verb	Present Participle	Past Participle
go	going	gone
write	writing	written
rise	rising	risen
fade	fading	faded
walk	walking	walked
send	sending	sent
take	taking	taken
love	loving	loved
pass	passing	passed
stop	stopping	stopped
know	knowing	known
hold	holding	held
put	putting	put
drink	drinking	drunk
(198)		• 英 文 困 學 配•

When the present participle is used as a part of a verb phrase, it follows the verb 'to be' to form the progressive tense.

- 1. I am going. 5. She will be going.
- 2. He is coming. 6. We shall be coming.
- 3. They are working. 7. He was working.
- 4. It is raining. 8. You were studying.

As the present participle can be used as an adjective to modify a noun, it can also be modified by an adverb.

- 1. This is a fading flower. (modifies 'flower')
- 2. A fighting horse is very fierce. (modifies 'horse')
- 3. The man is in an almost dying state. (modifies 'state' and is modified by 'almost')
- This is the most pleasing song. (modifies 'song' and is modified by 'most')

When the past participle is used as a part of a verb phrase, it follows the verb 'to have' to form the perfect tense.

- 1. I have gone. 3. We had written our sentences.
- 2. He has found a pen. 4. They had worked for the whole day.

The past participle of a verb, when it is used alone without the help of the verb 'to have,' is an adjective.

- 1. He is a retired officer. (modifies 'officer')
- 2. I saw some retired soldiers. (modifies 'soldiers') Euch past participles when used as adjectives can also be modified by adverbs.
 - 1. He is a highly educated man. (modified by 'highly')
 - 別 離 的 悲 哀 (199)

- 2. She is a well trained teacher. (modified by 'well') A Gerund is also called a Verbal Noun. It is formed, as a participle, by adding ing to the verb. When it partakes the nature of a noun, it can be used as the subject or the object of a verb, the complement to an intransitive verb or the object to a preposition.
 - 1. Boxing and swimming are good exercises. (subject)
 - 2. The Japanese usually learn wrestling. (object)
 - 3. His funny habit was sleeping. (complement)
- 4. He was fond of sleeping. (object to a preposition) Since a gerund is a double part of speech—— a noun and verb combined——, it can take an object or objects after it.
 - 1. He is clever at teaching English. ('English' is the object to the gerund 'teaching')
 - He is clever at teaching his sons English. ('English' is the direct object and 'sons' is indirect object to the gerund 'teaching')

上面所講的這三種動詞的 form: Infinitive, Participle, Gerund, 都是文句中很常用而且很重要的組成分子。 把這三種動詞的 form 再弄清楚了以後,大概一般普通的英文句子都可以看得懂了。』莫惠英說到這裏就住了口,好像覺得自己已經講到了一個段落。

『此外我覺得還有一個東西,也很常用,也很重要,你却並沒有講出來呢!』康庇禮說時望着莫惠英的臉,好像希望她 爺想起來。

『那是什麼呢?』莫惠英說着,就疑神去想,但是她想了 '200) '英 文 因 學 記:

一會,也沒有想起來。於是她說:

『我一時實在想不起來,就請康先生告訴我們能!』 『那就是 appositive!』康庇禮笑着說。

『哦哦!我知道了!』莫思英頓時囘憶出來,『Appositive 在中文就叫做「同位語」,也是一種名詞。

- 1. My foster-mother, Mrs. Niles, is leaving for America.
- 2. My teacher, Rev. Kenneth Campbell, is a venerable man.

A phrase or a clause can also be used as an appositive. Thus:

- 1. Nanking, the capital of China, is a big city. (phrase)
- 2. I, the man you are looking for, am here. (clause)

還有一種 Elliptical sentence, 句中有省略去的部份,也是很值得注意的。

- 1. I am as tall as he (is tall).
- 2. How old are yau? I am twenty (years old).
- 3. He may go if he wants to (go).
- 4. Can you come again? No, I can not (come).
- 5. He laughed as (he would laugh) if he were very happy.
- 6. You know this as well as I (know this).
- 7. He is the man (that) I wish to know.
- 8. (I) Thank you for your help.
- 9. What a pretty rainbow (it is)!
- 10. I will work overtime if (it is) necessary.
- 11. I love you more than (I love) him.
- 12. When (he was) in the street, he met a friend.
 - •別離的悲哀•

- 13. He says he can't go; I wonder why (he can't go)
- 14. It is twenty (minutes) after seven (o'clock).
- I have never heard of him, but he has (heard of him).

此外,動詞的 voice 也是很重要的。 尤其是 passive voice, 是英文惠所常用而是中文裏所不常用的,中國人學英文時更應 當特別注意。由 active voice 轉變成 passive voice 的方法 也非仔細小心不可,不然就會弄出很大的錯誤來。英文動詞的 tense, 也是中文專所沒有的。 中國人學英文時特別感到 tense 的困難, 就是因為這個原故。 tense 的種類本已很多, 再加 以同是一種 tense 而 active voice 和 passive voice 裏所用 的動詞又不同, 初學的人實在覺得頭痛。 動詞的難學處除了 tense 和 voice 以外還有 mood o Indicative Mood 和 Imperative Mood 倒並不算難,惟有 Subjunctive Mood, 填是最 難不過。我可以說,英文文法中最難的一部份是動詞,而動詞 中最難的一部份是 Subjunctive Mood o tense 和 voice 混 雜起來,已經很夠複雜的了,再加以 Subjunctive Mood 專面 實際上的時間和動詞表面上的 tense 又不一致,那能不使初學 的人愈弄愈糊塗呢?要想明白詳細的情形,只有拿起文法書來 仔細地去研讀,我現在--- 時也不知道從何講起了。』 莫惠英講 到動詞的這一部份交法,也漸漸感到頭赭紛繁,於是就住了口 ,不往下講了。

Mrs. Niles 這時已經將行李整理完畢,於是向莫惠英說:

『照你這樣的英文程度,到美國去進 High School 是— 點不成問題的。我現在先囘去,替你選擇一個較好的學校,安 排一個幽靜的住所,等你初中畢業了以後,我馬上就來迎接 你,帶你到美國去。你現在且好好用功讀書,安心等我就是 TOI

莫惠英聽了 Mrs. Niles 的話, 脸上不由得露出和悅的笑容來, 先前悲哀的樣子, 早已不知道消失到那裏去了。

由 H 縣赴上海,須在 P 鎮乘火車。由 H 縣到 P 鎮,是二十五里的水路,每天有小汽船來往通行。賴爾慈夫婦起程的時候,許多教職員學生都一直把他倆送到河岸。 Mrs. Niles 要上船了,莫惠英不由得又抱住她哭起來。 Mrs. Niles 在莫惠英的面類上左右吻了兩下,終於揮淚上船。

嗚嗚兩聲汽笛,船開去了。莫惠英的一雙淚眼直望到那船· 轉過山角,只剩下空中一縷黑烟的時候,才垂頭悵悵然囘家。

XIV. 最後 — 課

快要舉行畢業考試了,這天是康庇禮最後一次上英文課。 有些學生要求康庇禮限定個考試的範圍,康庇禮沒有答應。於 是學生們又問他考題的性質是怎樣,應該如何準備。康庇禮說 道:

『我們讀英文時是將英文分成文法和讀本兩種來個別研究 的,我們考試的題目也分文法性質的和讀本性質的兩種。我們 現在先來講文法性質的題目。在名詞裏面, Number 這一項 是比較最難的,你們預備時對這方而多注點意。有些字雖是單 數的形式却具有複數的性質;像 people, cattle, swine, vermin 。有些字是只有單數沒有複數的;像 furniture, poetry, scenery, issue 等等。有些字單數和複數的形式相同,成複數 '時並不加 s; 像 sheep, fish, deer, score 等等。有些字雖是 複數的形式, 却是單數的性質; 像 means, news, gallows 等等。還有些字是只有複數沒有單數的;像 scissors, fetters, trousers, bowels, politics 等等。在代名詞遺方面, 要多注意 Possessive Case 和 Relative Pronoun 。 在形容 詞和疏狀詞這方面要多注意 Comparison 。動詞裏面的Voice. Tense, Subjunctive Mood. Infinitive, Participle, Gerund 都是要考的。預備前置詞和連接詞的方法是要選擇一些重要的 字,將它們的意義和用法記住,我出題的時候是叫你們做例句 方面的。關於預備讀本的方法:第一,我要考默寫。我從前叫 你們背誦過的那幾篇短文,我要選出一篇來叫你們默寫。你們 要把那幾篇短文全都記住,並且把字的拚法也要弄清楚。第一 我要考生字。你們要把所學過的生字全都記住。不過你們記生

字的時候不要只記單字,要多記 phrase, 尤其是 idiomatic phrase。第三,我要考你們的閱讀能力。 我從別的一本你們沒有念過的書裏面,選出一篇文章來,叫你們閱讀,看你們到底能了解多少。這一項是無從預備的,你們就不用管它了。我所要考的,就是這幾樣。』康庇禮講着的時候,許多學生把他所講的要點都記了下去。

『闊於讀音一方面者不考呢?』林祖義站起來問。

『關於讀音一層,是很難用筆試的,我想就不考了能。』 康庇禮說。『在平常的時候,你們應該多注意我的發音和讀法 ,留心改正你們自己讀音上的錯誤。有兩種發音符號,雖然我 不考,我想現在教給你們,備你們在假期中自修時可以查了字 典自己就會讀音,不要先生親自口授了。這兩種音標, 種是 韋氏音標,一種是國際音標,都是通常字典上所用的。我現在 且把它們抄在黑板上,你們可以——都記下來。』康庇禮說罷 ,就轉臉在黑板上寫音標,學生們都在坐位上默默地記。

chā/es. ā, as in sen/âte, pref/âce, leg/is-lâ-tive. â, as in câre, pâr/ent, compâre/. ă, as in ăm, ădd, ăc-cept. re/ăd-mit/. a, as in fi'nd L in'fant, hus'bănd, mad/đm. ä, as in ärm, fär, fä/ther, äh, pälm. å, as in åsk, gråss, dånce. staff, path. à, as in so/fà, i-de/à, àbound', mo'lar. b, as in ba/by, be, bit, bob, but. ch, as in chair, chew, much. d, as in day, do, add/ed, ē, as in ēve, mēto, se-rēne!. ē, as in ē-vent/, dē-pend/, crēnie/. ě, as in ěnd, ěx-cuse/, ŏf-face/, car/pet. è, as in re/cent, de/cen-cy. nov/čl. e, as in ev/er, per-vert/; ru/mor (roo/mer). f, as in fill. feel, ful-fill'.
g (always "bard"), as in go. be-gin/. gz: for x as in ex-lst, ex-net. ex-am/ple. h, as in hat, hot, hurt, oho. hw: for wh as in what, why, where. ī, as in īce, sight, in-spīre/, ī-de/a. ī, as in īkī, ad-mīt/, dī-vide/, pivy (přt/ř). j, as in joke, jol/ly, prej/udice. k, as in keep, kick. ich, ach. ks: for x as in vex, ex/it, perplex/, dex/trous. kw: for qu as in queen, quit, qual'i-ty. thel'ly. I, as in late, leg, lip, lot, Inil, m, as in man, men, hum, ~ ham/mer. n, as in no, nine, man, man-

ā, as in āle, fāte, labor.

ō, as in öld, nöte, böld, he/rō, cal/i-cō. o, as in o-bey', to-bac'co, ana√ō-my. 6, as in ôrb, lôrd; law (16), saw (s6), all (61) o, as in odd not, for/est, hör/ror. o, as in con-nect/, con-trol/, com-bine/. ő, as in söft, dôg, cloth. oi, as in oil, nois/y, a-void/, gol/ter. oo, as in food. moon; rude (rood). õo, as in fõõt, wõol; put (põõt), pull (pool). ou, as in out, thou, devour/. p, as in pa-pa', pen, pin, pop, put. r. as in rap, red, rip, rod. s (always voiceless, or "sharp"), as in so, this, haste. sh, as in she, ship, shop, hush. t, as in time, talk; also for ed as in baked. 🌫 as in thin, (voiceless), th through, wealth. th (voiced), for th as in then, this, smooth. tū: for tu as in cul'ture, na/ture, pic/ture. ũ, as la ūse, pure, dū/ty ū, as in ū-nite', for/mū-late, hū-mane'. û, as in ûrn, fûrl; her (hûr), Ar (får). ŭ, as in ŭp, tŭb, stŭd'y, ŭphill/. ữ, as in cir/cūs, cau/cũs, cir/cum-stance. v, as in van. vent. vote, revoke. w, ss ir want win, weed, wood. y, as in yard, yet, yel/low, be-yond'. z, as in zone, haze, la'zy. zh: for z as in az'ure; for s as h pleas/ure;etc

ng, as in long, sing, sing/er.

ner.

國 際 音 標

(International Phonetic Symbols)

←	-5
Vowels	Consonants
[it] as in see, sea [si:] [i] as in city [siti], goodness	[b] as in bed [bed] [d] as in dog [dog] [f] as in fat [fæt] [g] as in go [gou] [h] as in hat [hæt] [k] as in cow [kau], kill [kil],
Diphthongs [ei] as in they [vei], day [dei] [ou] as in go [gou], know [nou]	[m[[sh]] [tf] as in church [t[s:tf]] [5] as in measure [mé3ə] [45] as in judge [45,445] [0] as in thin [0in] [8] as in then [8en], the [8e]
[ai] as in my [mai], high [hai] [au] as in how [hau] [bi] as in boy [bbi]	Non-English Sounds
[iə] as in here [hiə], idea [aidiə] [ɛe] as in there [öɛə], fair [fɛə]	[a] as in (Fr.) en route [a:(n)ru:t], centime [sa:(n)ti:m]
[99] as in more [m99], four [f99] [u9] as in tour [tu9], moor [mu9]	[Ē] as in (Fr.) lingerie [lĒ:(n)5əri], doyen [dwaiĒ(ŋ)] [5] as in (Fr.) raison d'ètre
Semi-voweis	[\rho] as in (Fr.) messieurs [mesj\rho] [y] as in (Fr.) revue [r\rho]
[w] as in will [wil] [j] as in yet [jet]	[x] as in (Scotch) loch [lox] [ç] as in (G.) Reich [raiç]

大家把發音符號抄完了以後, 莫惠英又向康庇禮說:

『你常常告訴我們說,叫我們多記生字,但是我覺得記生字實在是一件困難的工作,有時費了很多腦力,依然是記不住,不知道有沒有什麼捷徑可走?』

『記生字的辦法不外是多複習,多看書,多注意語根和語源。 此外還有一部份關於文字上的智識, 也是對於記憶生字有幫助的, 我現在也不妨教給你們。 這部份智識就是接頭語(Prefix)和接尾語(Suffix)。 把接頭語和接尾語的意義. 明白了以後,對於本字的意義總可以猜出一部份了。』康庇禮 說能,又在黑板上把重要的接頭語和接尾語部寫了下來,學生 們都在下面默默地記錄。

接頭語(Prefixes)

- Anti, 有 against, opposite 之意。如 anti-Japanese (反日本), antidote (解毒劑), antagonist (敵手)。
- Com, con, 有 with, together, wholly 的意思;在 b, m, p 誘字母之前寫作 com。例如:company(侶伴); combat (戰鬥); consult (商量); conclude (决定); combine (聯合); concur (會合)。
- de, 有down, off, negative 之意。如 descent (下降), depart (離去), derail (脫軌), degrade (貶退)。
- dis, 有 not, apart, negative, away from 之意。如: disgrace (不名譽), disorder (無秩序), disarm (解除武裝), dismount (下馬), dissolve (溶解), disbelief (不信), dissatisfy (不滿足)。
- ex, 有 from, out of 之意。如 export (輸出), express (表現), exclude (除外), exile (放逐)。

(208.)

- extra, 有 beyond 之意 9 如 extraordinary (非常的) 9 extravagant (渦分的) o
- im, in, 有 in, into, not 之意。在 b, m, p 之前為 im。例:
 immoral (不道德的), impossible (不可能的), inland
 (內地), income (收入), incomplete (不完全的)。
- inter, intro, 有 between, among 之意。例: interchange (交換); international (國際的); interjection (插入); interview (會見); introduce (介紹)。
- mal, 有 bad, ill 之意。如: maltreat (虐待), malpractice (惡行)。
- mis, 有 wrong, ill 之意。例: mistake (錯誤), misfortune (災害), mischance (不幸), misbehave (行爲不正)。
- multi, 有 many 之意。例 multitude (攀衆), multiply (繁殖), multi-millionaire (大富豪)。
- mono, 有單一, single 之意。例: monoplane (單葉飛行機), monotonous (單調的)。
- out, 有「外出」之意。如: outside (外邊), outdoor (戶外的), outbreak (暴發), outcry (呼喊), outrun (追越)。
- over, 有「過度」, beyond 之意。例: overeat (過食), oversleep (過寢), overestimate (估價過高), overflow (溢出), overboard (船外)。
- per, 有 through, extremely 之意。例: perfect (完全的), persecute (迫害), persevere (忍耐)。
- pre, 有 before 之意。例: preposition (前置詞); prepay

- (先付), preoccupy (先佔)。
- pro, 有 before, forth 之意。例: produce (出產), progress (進走), propeller 推進機), prospect (前途之展望), promote (提昇), proceed (前進)。
- re, 有 again, back 之意。例: return (囘來), refine (精 鍊), refresh (囘復), resound (反響,囘聲), recover (收復), react (反應)。
- retro, 有 back, backward 之意。例: retroactive (反動的), retrospective (回想的), retrograde (倒退的)。
- semi,有 half 之意。例: semicircle (半圓形), semicivilized (半開化的), semi-colony (半殖民地), semifluid (半液體)。
- sub, 有 under 之意。例: subway (地下鐵道), subject (臣民), submarine (潛水艇), subordinate (部下), subnormal (常能以下的)。
- super, 有 above, extremely 之意。例: superficial (表面的), superfluous (過剩的), superhuman (超人的), superior (上級的)。
- trans, 有 over, across, through 之意。例: transfer (移轉), translate (翻譯), transport (輸送), transparent (透明的), trans-Atlantic (橫渡大西洋的)。
- un, 有 not 之意。例: unkind (不仁慈), unhappy (不快樂的), unlike (不像), unlearn (忘記), undo (取消), untie (解開), unload (卸貨), unsettled (不安定的), unsatisfied (不滿足的), unwilling (不願意的)。

接尾語(Suffixes)

(1.) 名詞之接尾器

- 一er, 多用以表示「人」。如: speaker, writer 。 有時亦用 以表示器具。如 typewriter (打字機), receiver (受話 機)。
- -or, 亦表示「人」, 在 s, t, 1 之後半多用 or o 例: possessor (所有者), professor (教授), doctor (醫生), visitor (訪問者), sailor (水兵), tailor (裁縫), actor (劇員)。
- ar, 亦代表「人」。例: beggar (乞丐), liar (說謊者), scholar (學者)。
- --ist,亦表「人」,多半指藝術家或學者而言。例: artist (藝術家), dramatist (作劇家), pianist (鋼琴師),
 naturalist (博物家家), specialist (專門家)。
- -ess, 表女性。例: actress (女優); empress (皇后); lioness (母獅子)。
- —ie, —let, —ling, 指小巧的東西。 例: birdie (小鳥), auntie (aunt 之愛稱), pamphlet (小冊子), brooklet (小溪), darling (愛人)。
- —ance, —ence, —ense, 表抽象名詞。例: attendance (出席), elegance (優美), patience (忍耐), science (科學), independence (獨立), nonsense (無聊), suspense (中止)。
- —tion, —sion, 表抽象名詞。例: attention (注意), examination (考試), excursion (遠足旅行), passion (熱情), expression (表現), commission (委託), decision (决心), illusion (幻想), vision (視力), division (分割), confusion (混亂), collision (衝突), occa-

sion (時級) o

- —ment, —ness, —th, —ity, —ety, —ty, —ism 等全表抽象 名詞。
- -ment, 例: improvement (改善), punishment (處罰)。
- —ness, 例: kindness (慈愛), business (事業)。
- —th, 例: strength (力量), truth (眞實)。
- —ity, —ety, —ty, 例: purity (純潔), simplicity (單純), society (計會), liberty (自由), duty (義務)。
- —ism, 例: criticism (批評), heroism (俠義), idealism (理想主義)。

(2.) 形容詞之語尾

- --able, --ible, 例: agreeable, capable, terrible, visible.
- —al, 例: natural, fatal (致命的) , industrial (工業的) , intellectual (智能的)。 [注意:—al 有時亦可成為名詞之語尾,如: arrival, proposal, refusal, removal]
- --ant, 例: important, distant.
- -ent, 例: patient, obedient.
- -ful, 例: careful, cheerful.
- —less, 例: careless, endless.
- -ous, 例: curious, courageous.
- —ive, 例: passive, relative.
- —ed, 例: aged (老年的), noted (有名的), short-sighted (近視眼的), learned (有學問的)。
- —ish, 例: foolish, childish.
 - (3.) 疏狀詞之語尾
- —ly, 例: surely, kindly 。 [注意:形容詞有時亦有以 —ly 為語尾者,例: kindly, friendly, worldly, bodily,

• 英 文 困 學 記 •

(212)

timely e]

大家把接頭器和接尾語抄完了以後,高鴻才又向康庇禮說 :

『我覺得學習英文生字,除了難記憶而外,還有一個困難 ,那就是難運用。有時我們對於一個新學得的字,雖然它的意 思是明白了,但是在說話或作文的時候如果想用它,就覺得毫 無把握了。還有些時候,我們作文時大胆用了一個字,自己認 為是沒有錯的,但你却替我們改去,說我們用得不對。像這些 地方,不知應當怎樣用功,才能有進步?』

『作文時的遣詞擇字,本來是很困難的,』康庇禮說。『 必須對英文有很深的造詣,才能談到這一層。我們作文時,第 一步心目中先要有一個明白確定的思想,第二步要選擇適合切 党的字來發表這種思想。假如我們心目中根本環沒有一個明白 確定的思想,那是表示我們在智能學問上的修養還未成熟;如 果我們已經有了明白確定的思想,可是却選不出適當切合的字 來發表它,這是表示我們在文字上的造詣還不夠程度。英文中 有許多字乍一看來意思似乎都是相同的,但若進一步作更深刻 的研究,就可以發現它們的意義都微微有些分別。假如我們在 作文辟稍不留心,用錯了一個字,則我們所發表出來的思想, 和我們心裏當初所要發表的思想,就不會一樣了。像這些意義 近似而微有不同的字類在語言學上叫做 synonyms (同義語 ; 類語) 。凡研究高深英文的人沒有不注意研究類語的。我現 在不妨舉幾個例子來說一說。譬如「走」這一個意思,可以用 來發表它的英文字是很多的。最普通的是 walk, 就是「走路」 之「走」。但此外類似的字還很多,像 march, step, tread, pace, plod, trudge, tramp, stalk, stride, straddle, strut, stump, toddle 等等,都含有走的意思,但嚴格地說起來,彼 此又都有點區別。我現在且把這些字的正確意義一個個寫出來 ,給你們比較着看看。』康庇禮說罷,就轉臉在黑板上寫那些 字的意義。他寫的是:

Walk (走路) — move along by putting down first one foot and then the other.

march (正步走)——move with regular steps of the same length, as soldiers do.

step (舉步)---move the legs as in walking.

tread (放下脚步)---set the foot down.

pace (安步而行)——walk with slow, regular steps.

plod (步履維艱)——walk slowly, heavily and with great effort.

trudge (累得幾乎走不動了)——walk wearily.

tramp (用沈重的脚步走)——walk with heavy steps.

stalk (潛瑶獵物)——move carefully and quietly towards an animal that is being huntéd.

stride (大踏步走)----walk with long steps.

straddle (跨開兩腿)——walk, stand, or sit with the legs wide apart.

strut (高視闊步)——walk in a proud, important manner.

stump (行走困難)——walk in a stiff, clumsy way.

toddle (走不穩脚步)——walk with short, unsteady steps, as a baby does.

康庇禮寫完了以後又說:

『我不妨再舉幾個例子,可是不必再詳細地寫它們的意義 了。譬如「聰明」這個意思, 在英文中就有 wise, bright, clever, sagacious, intelligent, smart, shrewd 這些字。「職

爭」在英文中就有 war, battle, fight, conflict, combat, contest, encounter, action, struggle, campaign, quarrel, incident 這些字:「道路 | 在英文中有 way, road, roadway, avenue, street, route, path, lane 這些字。「注意」有 take care of, attend to, mind, pay attention to, notice, look out, look after, look to, have an eye to, note, remark, observe, beware 等等。「奇怪」有 strange, curious, odd, singular, queer, quaint, mysterious, miraculous, magic 等等。「說話 」有 speak, say, tell, talk, state, remark, relate, converse, gossip, chat, mention, refer, utter, express 等等。「 可怕」有 fearful, awful, dreadful, terrible, frightful, horrible, formidable, tremendous 等等。[著名] 有 famous, renowned, well-known, noted, notable, illustrious, eminent, distinguished 等等。「請求 | 有 ask, beg, pray, call upon, call for, require, request, claim, demand, entreat 等等。 其餘的我也不再多聚了,總而言之,這些字就叫做 synonyms, 凡想對英文作高深研究的人都是不可不注意的。此外,還有兩 種字與這有點聯帶關係的就是 antonym 和 homonym 。 antonym 的意思是「反義語」。 像 big, small; good, bad; white, black; hot, cold; warm, cool 等就愿於這一箱。 Homonym 的意思是「同音異義」語。像 meat, meet; pale, pail; sell, cell; our, hour 等就是。不過這種字比較上並不算 怎樣重要,我也不必多說了。』

康庇禮譯完了這段話,還沒有敲下課鐘,但學生們已經沒 有人再行發問,課室內於是暫趨沈寂起來。停了一會,姜亮友 忽然高聲說:

『康先生,我們談談時事罷!』

『現在中國政府正在嚷着要取消治外法權呢,將來你們美國人犯法, 此都要歸中國的法院審判了!』劉恆育也大聲說。

『只要中國的司法制度能近代化,監獄能加以改良,我們 美國人是並不希望保留什麼治外法權的。』 康庇禮先生說。

『治外法權在英文上是怎麼說的?』那坐在莫惠英旁邊的 孫重美忽然打破了沈寂。

康庇禮聽說,立刻拿起粉筆來在黑板上寫了一個很長很長的字:

Extra-territoriality

『這個字眞長呀!—共有十九個字母呢!』莫惠英將那個字母數了一遍,很驚奇地說,引得全班的學生都驚異起來。

『這個字雖長,但並不難記,』康庇禮說。『只要先把它的語根弄清楚,全字的意義也就立刻了然了。這個字的語根是territory,意思是「領土」。 territoriality 的意思是「領土權」。 extra 有 beyond 的意思,我們在接頭語裏已經學過了。所以合起來就成了「治外法權」的意思。』

『這個字算不算英文中最長的字呢 ? 』 林祖義很好奇地 問。

『還不能算最長,』康庇禮說,『我是研究宗教的人,在 我讀宗教史的時候,遇到過一個字,比這個還要長得多哩!』 康庇禮說能,又拿起粉筆來在黑板上寫了一個更長的字。

Anti-establishmentarianism

全班學生看見了這樣的長字不由得就打了一陣閧,大家都 不住口地詫詫稱奇。

『一共二十五個字母咧!』高鴻才叫着說。

『這個字雖長,也是不難記憶的,』康庇禮說,『主要的關鍵還是在你們能不能找出語根來。這個字的語根是 establish,

普通的意思是「建立」,但在宗教史上有一個特別的意思,就是「建立國教」。 establish 是動詞, establishment 是名詞。 establishmentarian 是「主張建立國教的人」, establishmentarianism 是「建立國教主義」。 anti 是「反對」的意思,也是我們在接頭語裏所學過的。所以合起來全字的意思是「反對建立國教主義。」』

『這個字總要算是英文基 最長的字了罷! 』 林祖義這次似乎以為康庇禮的囘答一定是肯定的了。

『也還不能說就算是最長的字,』出乎林旭義意料之外的 ,康庇禮却說出了否定的囘答,『有一次我生病,醫生叫我買 一種藥來服用,我記得那個藥的名稱,比這個字還要長啦!不 過我不是研究醫學的人,那藥名子我看過以後,不久就忘記了 。』

康庇禮說到這裏時已經敲下課鐘,於是他立刻改了口氣, 向學生們說。

『初中的英文,你們是都念完了。今天的這最後一課,就 照這樣結束了罷。下次我們見面,就要在考場上了。希望大家 都好好預備功課,一齊考得很好的成績,那對於我教書的人, 也是一種光榮啊!』康庇禮說話時,那温柔敦厚的面容上,浮 滿了微笑,使人看了,更外覺得和藹可親●

康庇禮說完話後和學生們點頭告別,學生們的目光都一齊把他送出了数室的門,看他穿過庭院,越過矮樹叢,再轉幾個灣,那高大的背影,就送失在一片綠葉裏了。

(上卷終)

勘誤表

16頁 22頁 36頁 36頁	27/17 7 /17 16/17	112年 中	w pronoun 脱「敢」字 脱「the」字	
	16/17			
48頁	13行	末字	aftenoon	
52頁	末行		版「学」李	
65頁	4.42		脱「夷」字	
67頁	26/17	首字	aftenoon	
109頁:	217	. 15字	脱「份」字	

英文因學記

上 卷

版權所有・翻印必究

中華民國三十六年三月初版

049 1(36·3) 32 平 甲 20· 全 232 甲 7·0 兌 質 (15)

 著作人
 方
 達
 文

 優行人
 黄大白
 白

 優行所
 名山書局上海醫者國路義安里一號

 印刷所
 元豐中西印刷所

